

7 Weapon Series By Gu Long

Translators:

Huang YaoShi, Siven & Fastclock.

Book 1 - Longevity Sword

Book 2 - Peacock Feather

Li Bai's Poem - translated by Fastclock

A city of white jade in the sky, Has five towers and twelve castles, Where
a divine being touched the top of my head, Making the hair grow long
and my life with it.

~ Li Bai* [Famous Tang dynasty poet]

Chapter 1: Wind & Cloud Inn - Translated BY Huang YaoShi

*Wind & Cloud (Feng Yun) implies an unstable or stormy situation

Dusk.

Upon the stone plated road, nine eccentric looking people appear, all wearing yellow hemp tunics, hemp shoes, and large bowl-sized golden earrings stringed on their left earlobe. They all have a head full of untidy red hair that spreads across their shoulders like flames.

Among the nine, there are tall, short, old, young; each with a different countenance, but they all have the same dead facial expression. They walk, without moving their shoulders or bending their knees, like zombies.

They slowly march through the long street, silencing everywhere they pass. Even the children suddenly stop crying because they are too scared.

At the end of the street, four giant lanterns sat atop a ten-meter flagpole.

Bright red lanterns, lacquer black words!

Written “Wind & Cloud Inn”.

The nine red-haired strange people walk to doorstep of the inn and stop. The first person takes off his golden earring and waves his hand. THUMP! The large earring strikes upon the stone wall besides the lacquer black gate.

Sparks flash as the earring wedges into the stone. The second person lifts a bundle of red hair from his shoulder and gently slices his left hand, as if it were a knife, through the hair.

The second person ties the locket of hair he had just cut to the golden earring upon the wall. The nine continue to walk forward.

The strands of red hairs wave in the wind as if they are flames, but the nine people have already disappeared into the boundless darkness.

Just at this moment, eight sturdy steeds came galloping from the darkness. The sounds of hooves thunders upon the stoned street as if they were rain hitting a wind sill or drums beating in battle.

All the riders wear green cloth robes, white cloths wrapped around their head, pointed shoes, and puttees around their lower leg. Every single one of them appeared bold and nimbly skilled.

As the eight horses fly pass “Inn of the Moment,” the eight riders all wave a hand at the same exact moment.

The sabers flash like lightning and another THUMP thudded. Suddenly, there are now eight glistening steel sabers stuck on the thick flagpole.

The sabers’ handles still vibrate as the red silk pieces at the handle butts puff and roll along.

The eight horses vanish.

++++++

Darkness thickens. The sound of hooves suddenly reappears in the street, seemingly more intense than the horde that had just passed.

But, there is only one horse.

A purely white without a single strand of mixed hair from head to toe arrives at the doorstep. With an unexpected neighing sound, the rider straightens up.

Now we can see clearly that the rider is a burly shirtless man with a curly beard. His black muscles seemed to be made of steel.

The husky man pulls the reins and sees the golden ring and red hair by the door and the eight sabers on the flagpole. With a smirk, he jumps off the saddle and his left and right hand, each grabs a leg of the his horse.

With a thundering howl, the man raises his horse up in the air and places it atop the door eave.

Another neigh sounds. Its manes dance in the air, but its four hooves, without a single movement, seem to be nailed to the eave.

The bearded man throws back his head with a sound of laughter and strides away. In a twinkle, he is gone, but the white horse is left deserted, standing under dark clouds and west winds, leaving an eerie feeling in the air.

++++++

The long street is desolate, for all the households have closed their doors.

“Wind & Cloud Inn” is also uninhabited. When customers saw the gold earring and eight sabers, they slipped away through the back door.

But, the white horse still stands not moving, as if it were a stone statue, in the face of the west wind.

Suddenly, a middle-aged thin-faced scholar wearing a blue robe and white socks slowly walks in a very leisure mood, but his pair of pupils shines with glory.

He folds his hands behind his back, walks slowly towards the inn, raises his chin to take a look, and sighs, “Excellent horse! Indeed an excellent horse, but pity the owner is heartless and wronged you.”

He suddenly waves an arm from behind his back, flying his long sleeves, sweeping a wave of strong wind.

The white horse is frightened and neighs again, as it leaps down from the door eave.

The middle-aged scholar supports the horse stomach with both his hands and places it lightly on the ground. He pats its rear and says, “Go back to tell your owner to come. Just say there is a good friend waiting for him.”

As if it understood the man's intentions, the white horse instantly kicks its hooves and gallops away.

Middle-aged scholar pulls down the golden ring on the door side, then walks into the inn and taps the flagpole.

Eight steel sabers all fall down at the same moment.

The scholar sweeps his sleeve again and wraps the eight sabers within his sleeve. He then asks solemnly, "Where is the flag?"

A thin small shadow suddenly sweeps from within the inn, climbs atop the flagpole like an ape, and within seconds, reaches the top.

A large flag all of a sudden rolls out from the pole tip.

Upon the snow white flag is rampant jet-black dragon, looking as if it will burst pass the clouds and fly away any moment!

Night.

There are no stars or moon, with dark clouds and intense winds.

But in the garden, the lights are brightly lit and the table is presented with wine.

The middle-aged scholar murmurs to himself slowly while drinking.

Suddenly, he raises his cup towards the a large banyan tree outside the garden and smiles, “I’ve heard that Clan Leader Miao has the quality of rivers and oceans. Since you’re already here, why not come and have a drink?”

From the think shady banyan leaves rises an owl-like strange laughter. A shadow flies like an arrow and lands on the ground lightly as if it were a four ounce cotton.

The man has a pug nose, wide mouth, a head full of red hair, and wears three golden earrings upon his ears. Even when he has already reached the ground, his earrings still jingle. He is the Red Hair Clan Leader, ‘Flame God’, Miao Shao-Tian.

* Miao Shao-Tian: Miao=Surname, but also imply “tongue of fire”; Shao=Burn; Tian=Sky

His pair of eyes, as if they too have flames burning within, glares at the middle-aged scholar, and said heavily, “Is your excellency Sub-Clan Leader Gong-Suen of the Green Dragon Clan?”

The scholar stands and bows with his fists in front of his chest and replies, “Yes, it is I, Gong-Suen Jing.”

* Gong-Suen Jing: Gong-Suen=Surname; Jing=quite, still, calm

Miao Shao-Tian’s owl-like laughter roars again, “Indeed worthy of being a top figure in the Green Dragon Clan, such an keen pair of eyes.”

Suddenly, there is the sound of horse hooves, thick as rapid successions of heavy rain, galloping towards them.

Miao Shao-Tian’s pair of think flaming eyebrows wrinkled as he said, “Little

Zhang has arrived, too. Not at all slow.”

The hooves sound abruptly stops; a clear voice laughs, “Green Dragon’s important date, who on earth is bold enough to be late?”

While the clear voice laughs, a person had already jumped over the wall to within. The man wears a study suit, purposely opened at the chest to show off his muscular pectorals that are even whiter than his suit.

Miao Shao-Tian gives a thumb up and snorted, “What a fine ‘White Horse’ Little Zhang San. Haven’t seen you for a few years, but you seem to have grown younger and more handsome? If Old Miao had a daughter, I’d definitely pick you as a son-in-law.”

* Zhang San: Zhang=Surname; San=three

“Even if you had a daughter, no one is daring enough to want her,” lightly replies White Horse Zhang San.

“Why?” Miao Shao-Tian stares at him.

“With your dignity, your daughter cannot be any better.”

Miao Shao-Tian stares at him, stares for a while until he finally replies, “We’ve come here today to do business, and don’t be impatient to start a fight.”

“How about drinking wine?” asks White Horse Zhang San .

“Then the more impatient, the better. Come, let’s toast three cups to Sub-Clan

Leader Gong-Suen first.”

Gong-Suen Jing chuckled, “I have a weak wine capacity, how about let me first toast a cup for you three?”

Miao Shao-Tian folded his eyebrows, “Three?”

Only to hear a person chuckle from the ridge of a neighboring roof, “East-River Red Hair and West-River White Horse have already arrived, how could I be bold enough to be late?”

Miao Shao-Tian asks “Zhao Yi-Dao of Tai-Xing?”

But, he doesn’t need to wait for an answer.

He has already seen the bright saber, sharp saber!

* Zhao Yi-Dao: Zhao=Surname; Yi=one; Dao=saber

There is no scabbard.

The bright saber is inserted directly in the strap of his red belt.

A green cloth robe, white head wrap, and a belt redder than Miao Shao-Tian’s hair, match perfectly with his saber’s cloth.

Gong-Suen Jing’s eyes were sharp like the saber, slicing across the man’s face, “Green Dragon Clan passed out twelve invitations, but only three of you arrived

tonight. Are the other nine no longer coming?"

"Nice, very directly asked," says Zhao Yi-Dao.

"The three of you have come from thousands of miles away, of course you've not come to listen to nonsense," Gong-Suen Jing says.

"Indeed not."

Miao Shao-Tian hideously grinned, "Of the rest of the nine guests, at least three will not be showing up."

Zhao Yi-Dao corrects, "Six."

"the Bamboo Clan, Steel Ring Sect, and Li Family of Tai-Yuan were all my doing," says Miao Shao-Tian.

Zhao Yi-Dao adds, "Our three friends from Twelve Chained Chickens, Yangtze Waterways, and Yen Family Fists of Chen-Zhou, suddenly felt headaches when they were halfway here, so..."

"So...what?"

"Now, their heads don't hurt anymore," Zhao Yi-Dao answers.

"Who cured them?"

“Me.”

“How?”

Zhao Yi-Dao replies, “I sliced their heads off.”

He then adds slowly, “No matter whose head is cut off, they will have no more headaches.”

Miao Shao-Tian laughs, “Good method, very straight forth.”

White Horse Zhang San abruptly declares, “I’m afraid the two elders from Thousand Bamboo Village and Flying Fish Temple will not be coming.”

“Oh?”

“They are sleeping, and in very deep sleep.”

“Where are they sleeping?”

“Bottom of Dong-Ting Lake.”

Miao Shao-Tian chuckles, “Clever. It’s not just a cooling area, but will never be disturbed.”

White Horse Zhang San calmly replies, “I have always given great care to the elders of Wulin.”

Zhao Yi-Dao says, “Those that should be here, should have already arrived, but where is Green Dragon Clan’s good?”

“Nice, directly asked,” replies Gong-Suen Jing.

“Sub-Leader has invited us here not to listen to nonsense either, I assume.”

Gong-Suen Jing nodded, “Indeed not.”

Zhao Yi-Dao asks, “Would you first like to hear my price?”

“Not now.”

“What are we still waiting for?” asks Zhao Yi-Dao.

“The good did not come to us easily; the more people willing to auction, the better the price will be.”

Miao Shao-Tian stares, “You are still waiting for someone?”

“Don’t forget, I’ve invited nine more guests here, but you all have only finished off eight.”

“Who’s the one that’s left?”

“A person who neither has a headache or sleeps.”

“Honestly, this good is definitely going to us Red Hair Clan, so it doesn’t matter if there is someone else coming or not,” sneers Miao Shao-Tian.

White Horse Zhang San scoffs coldly, “Green Dragon Clan is generally fair in business deals. As long as your price offer is the highest, the good will go naturally to Red Hair Clan.”

Miao Shao-Tian says sternly, “Unless you want to compete with my price?”

“Why else would I come?”

Miao Shao-Tian rapidly stands up, staring at him. The golden earrings on his ears still jingled.

A sudden sound of a rattling and neighing reverberates a magnificent carriage, pulled by six horses, stops outside.

Four burly chest-puffing men strides the shaft of the cart, leaps off, and bends over to pull open the door.

After a long time, a beardless and obese pale man steps out of the carriage, panting. Having not even taken three steps, he is already tired and gasping for air like a bull.

Behind him is a tall and thin man dressed in black, following him like a shadow. He has a toasty tanned face and two eyes that sank in, as if he were a

sickly ghost. But, his footsteps are extremely light and a shiny objects hang from his waist. At a closer look, the objects are a pair of solitary shaped swords.

These types of weapons are not only hard to practice, but also hard to make. People who use this type weapon are very rare, but those who do use this weapon, nine out of ten are experts.

Miao Shao-Tian, Zhao Yi-Dao, and White Horse Zhang San, three pairs of eyes, all immediately focuses on this pair of solitary swords.

White Horse Zhang San frowned as asked quietly, “Who is he?”

Gong-Suen Jing replies, “Young Master Zhu from Million Gold Hall of Suzhou.”

“And his bodyguard?”

Gong-Suen Jing smiles, “I’m afraid he’s only a bodyguard.”

White Horse Zhang San goes silent, but he then suddenly turned to Zhao Yi-Dao, “Didn’t he come from your way?”

“I think so,” replies Zhao Yi-Dao.

“How come he doesn’t have a headache?”

“Even if he did, I can’t cure it.”

“Why?”

“His head is too big,” says Zhao Yi-Dao lightly.

++++++

Young Master Zhu has already sat down, but he still constantly wipes his sweat and pants.

He had only walked a grand total of at most twenty or thirty steps, but looks as if he had just climbed seven or eight mountains.

The man in black still stuck behind him like a shadow, never more than an inch from his side, his pair of claw-like bony hands never able to leave the pair of rare weapons hanging from his waist.

Within his deep sunken in eyes contains a strange jeering spirit, as if mocking those who stand before his eyes, asking them why they have wasted their time in coming here.

The lanterns of Wing & Cloud Inn sway in the wind; just as Miao Shao Tian’s golden earrings jingle.

White Horse Zhang San feels a chill, and gently pulled his clothes over his bare chest, narrowing the gap of uncovered skin.

However, Zhao Yi-Dao looks contemplatively at the wine cup atop the table,

as if deciding upon a harsh dilemma.

No one speaks because there is much hostility between the people present.

Gong Suen Jing is obviously enjoying their air of animosity. He slowly sighs and smiles, “The four of you do not know each other, but surely have heard of each other’s names. Therefore, you won’t need me to introduce yourselves.”

“Indeed not,” says Miao Shao-Tian.

“We didn’t come here with the purpose of making friends,” adds White Horse Zhang San.

“Even if we were originally friends, for this object, we won’t be anymore.” Miao Shao-Tian rolls his eyes sideways to look at him.

White Horse Zhang San scoffs, “Leader Miao has always been a sensible person.”

Miao Shao-Tian also scoffs, “Now that everyone is here, where is the stuff?”

“Of course there is the stuff, but...” says Gong-Suen Jing.

“But...what?”

“The Green Dragon Clan always follows the rules exactly while doing business. We stress attention to equal honesty with aged and young customers

and money exchange on the spot.”

“Okay!” agreed Miao Shao-Tian.

He clapped his hands, and the nine hemp dressed freaky men suddenly appears from the darkness. Every one of them holds a hemp bag, obviously not of lightweight.

At this moment, there is again the sound of heavy footsteps at the door. The curly bearded man carries a large iron chest above him, walking slowing inside. Blocks of his iron-like black muscles protrude out. Every step he takes, his foot leaves a deep impression in the ground.

“Golden ring surrounds eight walls, white horse neighing in wind, now that I’ve seen, I see that Red Haired Nine Heroes and Giant Hercules have arrived,” smiles Gong-Suen Jing.

“Don’t forget about Eight Blasting Sabers,” adds White Horse Zhang San.

Zhao Yi-Dao finally lifts his head and chuckles, “Red Hair of East-River and White Horse of West-River are both of great wealth and power. How can Fast Sabers of Tai-Xing compete for first? This stuff, us brothers will resign from competition.”

Miao Shao-Tian laughs wildly, “Good, Chief Zhao is a sensible man.”

His laughter suddenly stops, his fire-like vision nailed at Young Master Zhu, “So what is Million Gold Hall’s young master’s intention?”

Young Master Zhu's heavy breathing has finally stopped and gazes at his hands like a young man looking at his first love.

But, he still replies to Miao Shao-Tian's question by asking, "You are asking for my meaning?"

"Humph!"

"I have no meanings. I'm usually too lazy to think."

Miao Shao-Tian's face now shows anger, "No meanings? No gold?"

"I have."

"How much did you bring?"

"You want to see?"

"Here, they stress attention on hard money exchange on the spot."

"You've already seen it."

"Where?"

"My words are the gold."

Miao Shao-Tian's face turns solemn, "So however much you say, is amount counted?"

"Right."

"You mean, if I offered one hundred thousand, you would offer one hundred thousand and one?"

"You are indeed a sensible man."

Miao Shao-Tian's eyesight suddenly moves toward the pair of solitary shaped swords.

The nine hemp-dressed red haired freaks has already quietly moved themselves to surround Young Master Zhu. But, Young Master Zhu still stares at his pair of hands, as if except for this pair of hands, there is nothing worth looking at.

With a sudden "ding" sound, as if two golden cups striking each other, Miao Shao-Tian's hand has already clawed toward the pair of solitary swords.

His movement is both swift and accurate.

He never would have thought that another pair of hands is faster than his—a pair of fat and well maintained hands.

His hands has not yet reached the pair of solitary swords, but this pair of

hands suddenly took the golden earrings off his ear.

The golden earrings clashed against themselves, and another “ding” sounded.

Miao Shao-Tian turns his body over high in the air and retreats six meters.

The man in black still sticks behind Young Master Zhu like a shadow, not moving.

Young Master Zhu still gazes at his pair of hands, only this time, astonishingly, they hold an extra pair golden rings.

++++++

White Horse Zhang San’s facial expression changed, too.

Zhao Yi-Dao looks at the wine cup in front of him and suddenly sighs, ‘Now you understand what I mean?’

“What meaning?”

“Even if he had a headache, I can’t cure it.”

White Horse Zhang San couldn’t help but also sigh, ‘Yes, his head is truly too large.’

++++++

Gong-Suen Jing, showing a slight smile, says slowly, “Since everyone has brought their money, we shall go see the stuff.”

“Right, it’s best to see the stuff first. Perhaps I might not even be willing to offer a price,” says Young Master Zhu leisurely.

He puts the golden rings in the hands atop the table, takes out a snow-white silk cloth to carefully wipe his hands, and finally rises up, “please, please show the way.”

++++++

“Please, please follow me,” says Gong-Suen Jing.

He is the first to walk toward the inn, followed behind by Young Master Zhu slowly, as if about to pant again.

The man in black still follows, no more than one step away, Young Master Zhu. Now, White Horse Zhang San understands why his eyes contained such jeering spirit.

He isn’t scorning the people around him, but instead, himself.

Because only he understands that the person he is protecting, simply does not need his protection.

Miao Shao-Tian walks at the end, tightly gripping his pair of golden rings,

with the blue veins on the back of his hand popping out.

He wasn't suppose to come, but he must come.

The stuff seems as if it has a strange magnet, sucking him towards it step by step.

Not until the last moment, he will not give up any chances.

The stone stairs had originally faced upward, but now they suddenly sink downwards, revealing a shady tunnel.

At the entrance of the tunnel, there stand two statue-like men. For every ten steps afterward, there also stand two men, alike the first two. Their faces sullen like the green stoned walls.

On the stonewall, there is a carved rampant green dragon.

It has been rumored that the Green Dragon Clan has three hundred sixty-five secret alters. This place is no doubt one of them.

At the end of the passage, there are a couple very thick iron bars.

Gong-Suen Jing takes out a large chain of keys from his belt and used three of the keys to open three locks. Only then, did the two guards behind the bars pull open the door.

But this is still not the last door.

Gong-Suen Jing gently smiled, “I know many people are able to come here; the security here is not the most difficult to pass. But, to move forward from here on is an arduous task.”

“Why?” asks Young Master Zhu.

“Between here and the stone door over there, there are a total of thirty hidden triggers. I can guarantee that there are no more than seven people in this world that can pass all thirty of them.”

Young Master Zhu sighs, “Luckily, I’m definitely not one of these seven people.”

“Why don’t you give it a try?” says [/I]Gong-Suen Jing[/I] in a even more amiable manner.

“Perhaps I’ll try sometime in the future, but as of the present, I won’t.”

“Why not?”

“Because I’m still very happy with living right now.”

++++++

The distance from the iron bars to the stone door is not very far, but after

hearing Gong-Suen Jing's words, the stone door seems to be ten times farther away.

The stone door is very heavy.

Gong-Suen Jing, again, used three keys to open the locks on the door.

Behind the two feet thick door, lays a stone cell that is nine feet wide.

Inside the room seems ghastly and frosty, as if inside the heart of the tomb of an ancient king.

Where the coffin is supposed to lie, lays instead a giant iron trunk.

To open this trunk, requires at least three more keys.

But, these three keys were not the last three, for inside the giant trunk was another, smaller iron chest.

Young Master Zhu sighed again, "Just judging by this unbeatable security, we should offer higher prices."

"Young Master Zhu is indeed a sensible man," grins Gong-Suen Jing.

He raises the small chest out and opens it.

His amiable smile suddenly disappears, his expression seems as if someone

had stuffed a rotten persimmon in his mouth.

++++++

Inside the small iron chest is empty, save a single piece of paper.

On the paper is written, “Thank you, you are truly a kind man.”

The stone room was ghastly and frosty, but Gong-Suen Jing actually starts to sweat. Drops as large as soybeans drip down his pale face.

Young Master Zhu looks at him, his eyes as gentle as when he was looking at his own hands, and tenderly says, “You must know.”

“Know...know what?”

“Know who is thanking you.”

Gong-Suen Jing clenches his fists and suddenly turns and dashes outward.

Young Master Zhu sighs and murmurs, “Looks like he really is a kind man. Too bad they say that kind people don’t live long...”

++++++

“Suppose there really is only seven people who can pass the thirty triggers, which seven are they?”

“There is one that definitely does not have any problem. No matter how you count them, he must be one of the seven.”

“Who is it?”

“Bai Yu-Jing!”

END OF CHAPTER 1

Chapter 2: Heavenly Bai Yu-jing - Translated by Siven and Fastclock

Chapter 2 part 1 and 2 done by **Siven**, the rest done by **Fastclock**

Part 1 - TRANSLATED BY SIVEN

Bai Yu Jing* was not in heaven, but on a horse.

[Bai: surname, literally means white; Yu: jade; Jing – capital city; taken together the name becomes “White Jade City,” which appears in the famous poem, and is used by the author for the name of the protagonist as a wordplay.]

His saddle was worn with age, his boots and scabbard just as old, but his clothes were brand new.

The scabbard dangled loosely against his saddle; the spring breeze blew softly across his face.

He felt very pleased, very comfortable.

An old saddle was better for sitting; well-worn boots felt cozier on his feet; a used scabbard would never harm the finely-hone edge of his sword; new clothes always made him feel alert and rested, full of energy.

What he was most pleased about, however, were not these things, but a pair of eyes.

In a large carriage in front of him, a pair of captivating eyes peered at him furtively. This was not the first time he had seen these eyes. He remembered that the first time he saw them was in the inn of a small town.

He had just entered the inn, she was coming out.

She bumped into him.

Her apologetic smile was full of self-conscious shyness, her face bright red as rain-soaked sunset.

Embarrassed as she was, he secretly hoped that she would bump into him again, because though she really was a very attractive woman, he really was not a perfect gentleman.

The second time he saw her was in a restaurant. He had just began his third drink when she came in, saw him, and gave him that same smile, bowing her head demurely.

Her smile was still filled with shyness and embarrassment. That time he smiled too.

This was because he knew, had she bumped into another person, she would never have smiled again and again.

He also knew that he was not a dislikeable man, something he was quite confident about.

That was why he left first, but did not hurry along the road.

As expected, her carriage had now caught up to his horse -- did this happen for a purpose? Or was it pure chance? He thought himself a vagrant, born to wander, and had met all kinds of people along the road of his travels.

There were barbarians with red beards who roamed outside the walls of civilization, and cataphracts that rumbled across the great desert; there were fearless outlaws who slaughtered without blinking, as well as young, idealistic champions of chivalry.

During his wanderings, his saddle and scabbard gradually became worn and old; his beard grew stiff and thick.

But his life was always fresh and colorful.

He could never foresee these things -- what events might take place in the next stage of his journey? What kind of people he would meet?

The wind grew cold.

Misty spring rain suddenly fell from the clouds, wetting his new clothes.

The carriage before him stopped. He approached it, only to find the curtain already pulled aside, and those captivating eyes gazing intently at him.

Captivating eyes, shy smile, a face the shape of sunflower seed*, untouched by makeup, but wearing a dress vivid as clouds at sunset.

[”Face like a sunflower seed” is a commonly used Chinese expression to describe beautiful women, something like “teardrop-shaped face” in English.]

She pointed at her delicate feet, then at his wet clothes.

Her hand was frail and slender as scallion in the spring.*

[Again, another common Chinese literary expression to describe the slenderness of a woman's hands.]

He pointed at himself, then at the inside of the carriage.

She nodded, and with a charming smile, opened the door.

The interior of the carriage was cushy and dry, the silken seat covers smooth like her skin.

He dismounted, stepping up into the carriage.

Rain was still falling in a suffusing and playful mist; it rained just at the right time.

In spring time, it seemed that nature often indulged in the arrangement of serendipitous encounters, to bring fascinating people together in unexpected places.

There was not the least bit of awkwardness, nor unnecessary words.

It was as if he had known her since he was born. It was as if for his whole life he had expected to sit in this carriage.

It was a lonely journey, the travelers forlorn -- who can say that they should not have met by chance?

As he thought about wiping his rain-drenched face with his sleeve, she passed him a handkerchief of soft, red silk.

He gazed at her, but she lowered her head to play with a corner of her dress.

“You’re welcome.”

“My surname is Bai, call me Bai Yu Jing.”

She smiled charmingly and said, “A city of white jade in the heavens? Has five towers and twelve castles, where a divine being touched the top of my head, making the hair grow long and my life with it.”

He too smiled. “You like Li Bai too?”

She held a corner of her dress between her slender fingers, and began to recite in a soothing voice, “Traveling on the eastern sea, I beheld a mirage of the mountain of Lao. Upon the mountain I met the legendary Master An, who fed me plums big as melons, so that I grew old with no thought of my homeland. The pink vibrancy of youth left my face, and my hair took on the whiteness that signaled the end of life. I thirst for the golden elixir, and to step onto the chariot of clouds. I wish to follow the master into the heavenly beyond, and while away time by sweeping fallen flowers, accompanied by fairy maidens*.”

[An unskilled, rough translation of the original Chinese poem, as was the one in a prior paragraph.]

At the part about the mountain of Lao, she voice seemed to pause.

Bai Yu Jing ventured, “Miss Lao?”

Bowing her head even lower, she replied softly, “Yuan Zi Xia*.”

[Yuan: surname; Zi: purple; Xia: wispy clouds at sunset.]

Suddenly there came the sound of galloping hooves, as three horses dashed past, and three pairs of sharp eyes swept the inside of the carriage.

As the horses sprinted away, the rider in the rear suddenly leaped up from his saddle, lunging backward over the distance of two zhang to land in Bai Yu Jing’s saddle, and with a tap of the point of his foot, picked up the scabbard that hung from the saddle.

The three horses turned back toward the carriage.

With another twist of his body, the rider moved nimbly onto his own saddle.

In an almost imperceptibly short time all three horses disappeared into the hazy mist, no longer to be seen.

Yuan Zi Xia’s beautiful eyes widened as she exclaimed, “They stole your sword!”

Bai Yu Jing gave her a slight grin.

Yuan Zi Xia said, “You saw them taking your property, and you’re not going to

do anything about it?”

Bai Yu Jing kept grinning.

Biting her lip, Yuan Zi Xia said, “It is said that there’re some people in the kung-fu world, who hold their swords dear as their lives.”

“I’m not that kind of person,” said Bai Yu Jing.

Yuan Zi Xia sighed softly, seemingly disappointed.

Are there any girls who did not adore dashing heroes? If you fought to the death for a sword, they might liken you to a fool, or they might shed tears for you.

But if you sat there watching others take your sword away and did nothing, they would invariably feel disappointed.

Bai Yu Jing looked at her, then grinned once more and said, “You seem to know a lot about things in the kung-fu world.”

Yuan Zi Xia replied, “Not a lot, but I like to listen, and watch.”

“Is that why you left home to travel alone?” asked Bai Yu Jing.

Yuan Zi Xia nodded, and took to playing with the corner of her dress again.

Bai Yu Jing then said, “Fortunately you have not seen much; when you have seen too much you are bound to be disappointed.”

“Why?” Yuan Zi Xia asked.

“The things you see are never as romantic as the stories you hear,” Bai Yu Jing replied.

Yuan Zi Xia appeared to want to ask something more, but stopped herself.

Just then, galloping hooves resounded once more, as the three horses that just flew past them returned.

The rider in the lead leaned back suddenly like a flag blown away by the wind, and with an outreached hand, returned the scabbard to its former place on the saddle.

At the same time, his two companions brought their raised hands together, open palm covering balled fist*, and bowed forward from their saddles, before disappearing into the fine mist again.

[A gesture of respect.]

Yuan Zi Xia’s eyes became wider, looking perplexed and excited. “They brought back your sword!”

Bai Yu Jing simply grinned.

Yuan Zi Xia blinked, then said, “You knew they were going to return it?”

Bai Yu Jing grinned again.

Yuan Zi Xia stared at him, eyes bright with intensity. “They seemed afraid of you.”

“Afraid of me?” Bai Yu Jing repeated.

“You...you must have killed a lot of people with this sword!” Yuan Zi Xia’s voice trembled with excitement.

“Do I look like a killer?” Bai Yu Jing asked.

“No,” Yuan Zi Xia admitted.

“I didn’t think so either,” said Bai Yu Jing.

“But then, why were they afraid of you?” Yuan Zi Xia asked doubtfully.

“Maybe they were afraid of you, not me,” Bai Yu Jing suggested.

Yuan Zi Xia smiled. “Me? Why would they be afraid of me?”

Bai Yu Jing said with a sigh, “One smile can conquer a city, another smile can lay low a country.’ No matter how sharp a sword is, it can never compare to the smile of a beauty.”

At this Yuan Zi Xia's smile became even more alluring. Eyes winking, she said, "You...are you afraid of me or not?"

There seemed to be an irresistible power in her eyes, something that seemed to challenge him.

Sighing, Bai Yu Jing said, "Even if I didn't want to be afraid of you, I can't help it."

Yuan Zi Xia bit her lip, then said, "If you're so afraid of me, you better do as I say, right?"

"Of course," Bai Yu Jing nodded.

"Good," Yuan Zi Xia seemed satisfied, "Then I want you to have a drink with me."

Bai Yu Jing looked surprised. "You can drink?"

"I don't look like I can hold my liquor?"

"You do," Bai Yu Jing answered with another sigh.

He had no choice but to admit.

Because he knew, drinking is like the business of killing, you could never tell who is good at it just from looks.

Chapter 2 Part 2 - TRANSLATED BY SIVEN

Bai Yu Jing had been drunk before, quite often, but never as drunk as this.

When he was very young, he had already learned a lesson.

In the kung-fu world three types of people were most difficult to deal with – beggars, monks, and women.

If you wished to pass your days in peace, it was best not to bother them, whether in picking a fight, or in drinking.

Regrettably he forgot this lesson little by little, maybe because he did not want his days to be so peaceful.

This was why he ended up with a splitting headache.

He only remembered that at the end he lost three rounds in a row in their drinking game, and downed three large drinks, very quickly and coolly.

Afterwards his mind seemed to have abruptly became empty, and if not for something icy cold suddenly lying on his face, he might not have awakened.

Something this cold, must be the hand of Xiao Fang*.

[Xiao: little, a prefix of endearment between friends used before a person's first name, similar to "little brother."]

No person could have a hand this cold, except that Xiao Fang did not have a right hand.

In place of his right hand was an iron hook.

Xiao Fang was called Fang Long Xiang*, though he was not little.

[Fang: surname; Long – dragon; Xiang – aromatic, sweet-smelling.]

If you heard this name, and thought him a woman, you would be solely mistaken, as there probably were very few men in this world more manly than him.

Though their corners had become lined, his eyes were still sharp and bright, and could often see things you might not notice.

Now he was staring at Bai Yu Jing.

Bai Yu Jing looked up, and, clasping his head in both hands, said, “Heavens, it’s you. Why have you come?”

“I’m here because your ancestors earned enough karma,” Fang Long Xiang replied.

With the iron hook he lightly stroked Bai Yu Jing’s neck, and said in a nonchalant voice, “If I was Twin-Hook Wei Chang*, I’m afraid your head might be elsewhere already.”

[Presumably one of Bai Yu Jing’s enemies, who wielded a pair of hooks.]

Bai Yu Jing sighed, murmuring, “A quick death like that might not be so unpleasant.”

Fang Long Xiang too sighed. “It’s one of your problems, your life has always been entirely too pleasant.”

“How did you know I was here?” Bai Yu Jing asked.

“Do you know how you got here?” Fang Long Xiang enquired in return.

They were in a very clean-looking room, with a window showing the shade of a large maidenhair tree outside.

Bai Yu Jing took a look around, grinned helplessly and said, “Could it really be you who brought me here?”

Fang Long Xiang said, “Who do you think did?”

Bai Yu Jing said, “Where’s Miss Yuan?”

“She was drunk as you,” Fang Long Xiang replied.

Bai Yu Jing smiled. “I knew from the start, there was no way she could drink more than me.”

“She couldn’t drink more than you? Then how did you become drunk first?”

Fang Long Xiang asked.

“I drunk a lot more.”

“Oh.”

“Being a man, I didn’t insist that she drink the same amount as me every time, and while we played the drinking game, I didn’t hold her to the rules too seriously, so how could I not have drunk so much more than she did?” Bai Yu Jing reasoned.

“If you two were to fight, you’d naturally be too much of a man to take it seriously,” said Fang Long Xiang.

“Of course.”

Fang Long Xiang sighed. “The words of old timers’ in the kung-fu world indeed are never wrong.”

“What words?”

“It’s because most men have the same problem as you, so old timers understood, whether for fighting or drinking, never ever go up against a woman.”

“You’re an old timer now?” Bai Yu Jing smirked.

Fang Long Xiang continued, “Still, there’s one thing I wouldn’t have thought, which is how big your ego has grown.”

“What ego?”

“While you’re taking a nap here, there’re at least ten people standing guard outside.”

Appearing startled, Bai Yu Jing asked, “What kind of people?”

“Naturally people who were sent by powerful backers.”

“Who are they anyway?”

“If you can still stand up, you can see for yourself.”

This room was the last one on the upper floor of a small building. It had a rear window overlooking a narrow alley.

A hunchback wearing a tattered felt hat and shabby winter coat sat napping under the spring sun.

Fang Long Xiang pushed open the window with his hook. “Can you tell who this hunchback is?”

“I can only see that he’s a hunchback,” Bai Yu Jing observed dryly.

“You’ll know who he is if he took off that hat.”

“How would I know?”

“Because the color of his hair is different from others’.”

Frowning once, Bai Yu Jing said, “East River Red Haired Clan?”

Fang Long Xiang nodded. “Judging by his look, if not the second of the Nine Crimson Haired Fiends, he must be number seven.”

Bai Yu Jing asked no more, having always trusted Fang Long Xiang’s sharp eyes.

Fang Longxiang said: "You have a look again at that person under the lane entrance tree."

At the entrance to the narrow alley stood another large fruit tree, beneath which was a cart hawking soup made from the ground up roots of the lotus. The vendor was just pouring a pot of boiled water into a bowl of powder.

The pot looked very big, very heavy, yet he picked it up with one hand, seemingly without much exertion.

“His wrist strength isn’t bad,” Bai Yu Jing noted.

“Of course it’s not bad,” Fang Long Xiang replied, “Otherwise he wouldn’t be

able to wield a twenty-seven-pound* saber.”

[The Chinese pound is about half a kilogram.]

“Twenty-seven-pound saber? He’s from Tai-Hang Mountain?*”

[A famous mountain in China, presumably known for its style of kung-fu utilizing heavy sabers.]

“You finally got it right this time. His saber is hidden in the cart.”

“What about the man having the soup?” Bai Yu Jing pointed out.

Crouched at the foot of the tree was a man holding a bowl of freshly made lotus root soup. He was drinking it slowly, but his eyes appeared riveted in the direction of their room.

Fang Long Xiang said, “The cart has two sabers.”

Bai Yu Jing asked, “Both are brothers of Zhao Yi-Dao*?”

[Zhao: surname; Yi-Dao: roughly, “one stroke of the saber.”]

“He is Zhao Yi-Dao,” Fang Long Xiang replied. He patted Bai Yu Jing on the shoulder. “Having Zhao Yi-Dao as a guard, you can’t say your ego is small.”

Bai Yu Jing smiled. “My ego isn’t small to begin with.”

Just then a government detective, wearing a red ball-tipped hat* and pale colored uniform, meandered over from the other end of the alley. When he

reached the foot of the tree, he too bought a bowl of soup.

[A symbol of office, part of the uniform.]

“Looks like Zhao Yi-Dao should really change his job to selling lotus root soup,” Bai Yu Jing said with a grin, “The business doesn’t look bad, and there doesn’t seem to be any risk.”

“No risk?” asked Fang Long Xiang.

“What risk is there?” Bai Yu Jing asked in return.

“The man in the red ball-tipped hat, there’s no telling when he might give him a knife in the back.”

“Since when did government detectives kill people at will in small alleys?”

“He may be wearing a detective’s hat now, but he got here on a white horse.”

“White Horse Zhang San*?” said Bai Yu Jing.

[Zhang: surname; San: three. Zhang San is something like John Doe in English, usually used as a pseudonym.]

“It didn’t occur to you?”

“White Horse Zhang San always worked by himself. How did he get on the same boat as these guys?”

Fang Long Xiang replied drily, “That’s what I wanted to ask you.”

“Could it be coincidence?”

“Few things on earth are as coincidental as this then.”

Bai Yu Jing poured himself a cup of cold tea, drained it in one gulp, then asked, “Other than the four of them, who else are here?”

“Don’t you want to take a look outside?” said Fang Long Xiang.

“These ones are enough for me to look at already.”

“Take a nice and long look then, though I assure you the other characters are no less interesting.”

“How did you know all these people came?” Bai Yu Jing asked.

“Don’t forget whose turf this is,” Fang Long Xiang answered with a grin.

Bai Yu Jing too grinned. “If I had forgotten, I wouldn’t have passed out in a drunken stupor.”

Fang Long Xiang eyed him disapprovingly. “So it was all in your plan then. You counted on me to be your bodyguard.”

“You’re my bodyguard, and you’ll pick up my tab too,” Bai Yu Jing said,

smiling. “Since I’m a guest here, I’m going to leave everything in your hands.”

“What are you going to be in charge of then?”

“I’m going to be in charge of eating and drinking, until you cry for my help.”

Fang Long Xiang sighed and smiled weakly. “A person like you never gets drunk in the wrong place.”

Below the room’s front window was a courtyard, neither too big nor too small.

A purple-veined tree grew in the courtyard, beneath which stood a large vat of goldfish.

A plump young man, with hands crossed behind him, was looking at the goldfish. A tall and skinny figure in black followed behind him like a shadow.

An elderly woman, her hair all white, led a small, thirteen to fourteen-year-old boy across the courtyard in slow and faltering steps.

Three burly men in light-colored, athletic clothes stood in a row before the rooms on the west side of the courtyard, staring straight at the gates as if expecting someone to enter.

“I saw these three yesterday,” Bai Yu Jing mentioned.

“Where?” said Fang Long Xiang.

“On the road.”

“They were looking for you?”

“They only wanted to borrow my sword for a look.”

“Then?”

“Then they brought it back, naturally,” Bai Yu Jing replied coolly. “Even if it were the boss of the Green Dragon Clan who borrowed my sword, he would have returned it all the same.”

Fang Long Xiang frowned, and said, “You know they’re from the Green Dragon Clan?”

“If not from the Green Dragon Clan, I doubt others would have that much guts.”

Fang Long Xiang glanced at him from the corner of his eye, then shook his head and said, “Who do you think you are?”

“I’m Bai Yu Jing.”

Fang Long Xiang blinked. “What kind of person is Bai Yu Jing then?”

Bai Yu Jing replied with a grin, “A person who can’t be killed easily.”

Suddenly with a sharp sound the vat holding the goldfish cracked open, struck by some unknown object. The water within spilled out, and was about to drench the plump young man from head to toe.

No one could have expected it, but the body of the plump young man, weighing several hundred pounds, suddenly floated upward. With one finger he hooked a branch of the veined tree and hung himself in midair, as if his body were made of paper.

Surprisingly, it was the man in black whose pants became drenched.

“Who’d have thought, his flying technique isn’t bad,” said Bai Yu Jing.

“You can’t tell who he is?” Fang Long Xiang asked.

“From his moves, he seems to be from the Eh-Mei sect, except that since some thirty years ago, all that remained of the sect were nuns, who were all vegetarians. They couldn’t have produced a fat guy like him.”

“You’re forgetting the head mistress of the Eh-Mei sect,” Fang Long Xiang prompted. “Which family did she come from, before she became a nun?”

“The Zhu family, from the province of Su.”

“Correct,” Fang Long Xiang confirmed. “This fat guy is the family’s oldest son, the young master.”

“What about his bodyguard?”

“Not sure,” said Fang Long Xiang, “But judging by his kung-fu, a third-rate character at most.”

“He evidently knows first-rate kung-fu himself, so why take on a third-rate bodyguard?”

“Because it pleases him?” Fang Long Xiang shrugged.

The goldfish in the vat had poured out with the water. They thrashed about on the ground spastically.

The black-clad man, however, stood with his feet in the water motionlessly. His deep-set eyes showed seven parts of gloom, and three parts of grief.

Fang Long Xiang suddenly let out a long sigh, and said, “Now this is someone that deserves sympathy.”

“You pity him?” Bai Yu Jing asked.

“If not backed up against the wall with nowhere to go, who would willingly take a job like this? Also, judging by his weapon, he probably had a little fame in the kung-fu world, but now...” Fang Long Xiang abruptly changed the subject, asking instead, “Can you tell who broke the vat?”

“Si-Ma Guong*?” Bai Yu Jing offered.

[Si-Ma: surname; Guong: light; a famous scholar and official during the Northern Song dynasty, who in a well-known story broke a vat with a brick to save a friend.]

Fang Long Xiang gave him an annoyed look. “Funny, almost funny enough to die for.”

Bai Yu Jing grinned and said, “If it wasn’t Si-Ma Guong who broke the vat, then it must be someone hiding in the third room on the east side.”

Having dropped down from the tree branch, Young Master Zhu was snickering at that very room.

The white-haired old woman appeared with a wash basin, apparently wanting to put the goldfish inside. Her footing unsteady, she suddenly stumbled, and the water in the basin again splashed all over the ground.

“Who do you think this old lady is?” Bai Yu Jing asked.

“She’s an old lady,” Fang Long Xiang replied wryly.

“Why would an old lady come here?”

“This is an inn, anybody can come.”

“At least, she’s not here because of me?”

“You aren’t old enough yet.”

“Pale Dragon, Quick Saber, Crimson Hair and White Horse, all these people are here just for me?” Bai Yu Jing sounded doubtful.

“What do you think?”

“I don’t know.”

“You never ran afoul of them before?”

“No,” Bai Yu Ying shook his head.

“Never took their property?”

“Am I a robber?”

“Even if not, you can’t be far from one.”

Bai Yu Jing gave a quick chuckle, then said unhurriedly, “If they’re really here for me, why haven’t they sought me out?”

“Perhaps they’re afraid of you, or perhaps they’re waiting for someone,” Fang Long Xiang suggested.

“Waiting for whom?”

“The Pale Dragon Clan has three hundred and sixty five separate altars*, each led by an altar-master. None of them are easy to deal with.”

[Here it means a division of the clan.]

“I don’t seem that easy to deal with either,” Bai Yu Jing said with a smile.

“What about her?” Fang Long Xiang asked.

“Her?”

“Your drunken heroine.”

“What about her?”

“Since she came with you, you aren’t going to just leave her are you?” Fang Long Xiang questioned. “They already know she’s with you, so you think they’ll just let her go?”

Frowning, Bai Yu Jing became silent.

Fang Long Xiang sighed. “You were living a pretty good life. Why throw all that away and come here to suffer?”

Bai Yu Jing smiled coolly. “I’m not suffering yet.”

“If it hasn’t began yet, can’t be far now,” Fang Long Xiang said with a grin.

As his words ended, the sound of someone knocking on the wall came from next door.

“Is that her?” Bai Yu Jing asked.

Fang Long Xiang nodded and slapped him on the shoulder. “I’m afraid your suffering is about to begin.”

“What suffering?”

“Sometimes suffering is a pleasure, and pleasure, a suffering,” Fang Long Xiang observed wisely.

Yuan Zi Xia lay against the pillow upon a head of disheveled hair, her face pale as if she had been deathly sick.

The door to her room was shut but not barred. It was not known whether she had just unbarred it or never did in the first place.

She held a shoe in her hand, the print of which remained on the plaster wall.

Bai Yu Jing entered the room quietly and looked down at her.

He discovered suddenly that a woman who had been drunk the night before, took on a new, indescribable allure the morning after.

His heartbeat quickened.

If a man, who had been drunk the night before, saw a beautiful woman the next morning, his heart was bound to beat faster.

Yuan Zi Xia was gazing at him too. Biting her lip lightly, she said, “My head feels as if it’s about to split open, and you’re still laughing.”

“I’m not laughing,” said Bai Yu Jing.

“There’s no laughter on your face, but your heart is laughing.”

Bai Yu Jing grinned. “You can see into my heart?”

“En*,” Yuan Zi Xia made an affirmative sound.

[A Chinese interjection, meaning yes or a positive reply.]

The sound seemed to have come from her nose.

The sounds a woman makes with her nose, are often far more appealing than those that come out of her mouth.

Bai Yu Jing could not resist but ask, “You can tell what’s in my heart?”

“En.”

“Tell me.”

“I can’t,” Yuan Zi Xia shook her head emphatically.

“Why?”

“Because...because...” Her face reddening suddenly, she pulled up the blanket to hide behind, then smiled and said coyly, “Because your heart is having impure thoughts.”

Bai Yu Jing’s heart beat even faster.

Indeed he was having impure thoughts.

A man who was drunk the night before usually became more vulnerable the next morning, and less able to withstand temptation.

What about a woman who was drunk the night before? Bai Yu Jing almost could not resist going over to her.

Yuan Zi Xia’s eyes peered out at him from under the blanket. She too seemed to wish that he would come closer.

He was not a gentleman, but when his thoughts turned to those outside “standing guard” for him, his heart sunk.

Her face bearing the trace of a scarlet sunset, Yuan Zi Xia bit her lip and said, “When I saw you keep trying to get me drunk last night, I knew you weren’t really a nice guy.”

Bai Yu Jing sighed, and said with a strained smile, “I was trying to get you drunk?”

“You weren’t?” Yuan Zi Xia eyed him with annoyance. “Then why did we drink out of big bowls? Since when have you seen girls drink out of big bowls?”

Bai Yu Jing could say nothing.

When a woman is quibbling with you, even if you have something to say, it is best that you keep your mouth shut.

This was something he understood well.

Unlucky for him Yuan Zi Xia was not about to let him off so easily. “Now my head is hurting so much, how are you going to make it up to me?” she went on to say.

“You tell me.” Bai Yu Jing gave her a pitiable grin.

She looked at him thoughtfully. “You...you should at least make my headache go away.”

A voice suddenly yelled, “That’s easy, just cut her head off.”

The voice came from the hallway.

Before it had ended, Bai Yu Jing leaped out of the door.

The hallway was very narrow. The leafs of the maidenhair tree were swaying in the breeze.

There was no one to be seen, not even a shadow, Fang Long Xiang having departed a while earlier.

He did not like being the slice of pickle sandwiched between opponents.

If not Fang Long Xiang, then whose voice was it? The courtyard was once again silent.

Some one had cleaned up the goldfish on the ground. Young Master Zhu and his bodyguard likely went back to their rooms.

Only the three burly men from the Green Dragon Clan remained, still standing there staring at the gates, waiting for someone unknown.

Bai Yu Jing could only go back into the room.

Yuan Zi Xia had sat up in bed. Face turning pale white again, she asked, “Who’s outside?”

“No one,” Bai Yu Jing replied.

Her eyes widened. ‘‘No one? Then who was talking?’’

Bai Yu Jing smiled rigidly, the only response he could think of.

Yuan Zi Xia’s eyes became clouded with fear as she spoke hesitantly, ‘‘He...he told you to cut off my head...You won’t do it will you?’’

Bai Yu Jing could only sigh.

Suddenly Yuan Zi Xia jumped up from the bed and dove into his arms, her voice trembling, ‘‘I’m scared. This place is creepy, you can’t leave me here by myself.’’

Her hands hung from his neck tightly. The sleeves of her dress slid down, revealing arms smooth as jade.

All she wore was a flimsy gown. Her chest felt warm and firm. Bai Yu Jing was not made of wood, nor was he a sage untroubled by wants.

Yuan Zi Xia whispered, ‘‘I want you to stay here with me. You...why don’t you close the door?’’

Her soft and inviting lips hovered near his ear, a breath away.

Just then, the sound of crying came from the courtyard, heartbreakingly sad.

Who was crying? Whoever it was had picked the worst time.

Yuan Zi Xia's hands let go. No matter who heard such cries, their hearts would have sank.

She stood on the floor on naked feet, her eyes once more filled with apprehension, like a child who had become lost.

The cries seemed to come from a child too.

Bai Yu Jing walked up to the window and saw a casket. The white-haired old woman from before, and the small boy, were slumped against the coffin weeping loudly, their voice nearing exhaustion.

It was unclear who the pallbearers were, but they had placed the casket where the vat of goldfish once stood.

Enough of the living had come to this place, and now out of the blue, one of the dead as well.

Bai Yu Jing sighed, murmuring, "At least the dead can't have come because of me..."

Chapter 2 Part 3 - TRANSLATED BY FASTCLOCK

Yuan Zi Xia closed the door, moved a chair, and sat by the window.

In the courtyard, there were two monks who were chanting the scripture. From the building upstairs, looking down on the this harmony, the shiny head of the monks might appear very amusing, but their sutras sound was actually dignified and sorrowful.

In addition to this monotonous melancholy sound, there was the old lady and child's weeping sound. This caused the people who listened to it to think of the unspeakable sadness and void in their hearts.

Yuan Zi Xia sighed, and looked up to see the weather. She did not know when she got up, but the present actually already looked like dusk.

The weather was gloomy, as if it would rain. That three guys from the Green Dragon Clan, had also moved their chairs, sitting under the gallery. They looked around while waiting, with great anxiety on their faces.

Bai Yu-jing and Fang Longxiang were walking away, slowly going out of the door. They certainly had not looked at other people, but they actually felt many eyes staring at them behind their backs. If by any chance they turned their head to them, these people's vision would all avoid them immediately.

Yuan Zi Xia certainly was the exception. In her eyes, there was the indescribable kindness flowing like a silk thread locking up on Bai Yu-jing's heel.

Outside the door, it looked as beautiful as a painting. The dark brown path, gracefully started from here like a worm, passing through the lush green woods, along the deep blue lake water, extending to the bustling streets.

The far mountain looked cloudy, like in the fog, appearing beautiful as well as mystical. The small town was certainly not far away from here, but there was this deep lake water and lush green forest which actually isolated this from the bustling places down the mountain.

Bai Yu-jing took a deep breath of the fresh air moist and become mellow. He could not bear to sigh and said: "I like this place."

Fang Longxiang said: "There are many people who like this place."

Bai Yu-jing said: "There are live people, and also dead people."

Fang Longxiang said: "Usually all the dead people are not welcomed here."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Today is an exception."

Fang Longxiang said: "Any visitor who resides in this place, regardless of who he is, must abide with the custom and cannot oppose it."

Bai Yu-jing said: "If he kills people?"

Fang Longxiang has smiled, said: "That depends on who does the killing and whom he killed."

Bai Yu-jing coldly said: "This is actually the talk of a standard businessman."

Fang Longxiang said: "I am originally a businessman."

Bai Yu-jing walked several steps toward the front and said: "I thought they would not allow me to leave, but when I went out, nobody wanted to block me."

Fang Longxiang said: "En."

Bai Yu-jing also said that, "Perhaps, they did not come for me."

Fang Longxiang said: "Perhaps."

Bai Yu-jing had suddenly patted his shoulder, said with a smile: "This time your luck is good."

Fang Fanglong said: "What luck?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "You do not need to fear that I am invading your hospitality. I will go early in the morning tomorrow."

Fang Longxiang said: "Tonight you... ..."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Tonight I want to drink, don't let your cabinet stay close, and let's make the daughters blushed."

Fang Longxiang complexion suddenly changed somewhat melancholy, and regarded the cloudy mountain far away. He slowly said: "Tonight certainly can be very long."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Oh."

Fang Longxiang said: "Such a long evening, there will be many matters."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Oh."

Fang Longxiang said: "Also long enough to kill many people."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Oh."

Fang Longxiang had suddenly turned his head, and stared at him. He said: "You must wait for that person to come, and only then you would be willing to go?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Who is that person?"

Fang Longxiang said: "The person that the Green Dragon Clan people is waiting for."

Bai Yu-jing was smiling, in the eye actually brought a kind of very unusual expression. After a very long time, only then he slowly said: "To be honest, I gradually thought indeed this person is very interesting,"

Fang Longxiang said: "You don't know anything at all about him."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Because I do not know, therefore only then I would think him as interesting."

Fang Longxiang said: "So long as it is an interesting matter, you must certainly go?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Usually yes."

Fang Longxiang said: "Is there any person who can cause you to change your mind?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "No."

Fang Longxiang sighed, said: "Good, I take the wine and lead your drunken heroine down to drink."

Bai Yu-jing said: "I also must go and change into a new set of clothes."

Fang Longxiang said: "Now?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "When it is time to drink the wine, I always like putting on the new clothes."

Fang Longxiang the vision flashed, said: "When it is time to kill, you also like to change into a new set of clothes?"

Bai Yu-jing smiled and lightly said: "That depends on whom I kill."

Yuan Zi Xia sat on the bed, holding the padded quilt and said: "Why don't we take the wine here, and drink in this room."

Bai Yu-jing smiled and said: "To drink the wine, we need the right place, otherwise the good wine will also fade badly."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Why isn't this place right?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "This place is for sleeping."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "But... ... there are many people downstairs, I do not have new clothes to change, how can I go downstairs?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "I am your new clothes."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "You?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "With me in the same place, you don't need to change clothes, the others may not necessarily look at you."

Yuan Zi Xia has smiled charmingly and said: "You always think yourself as very great?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Usually yes."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Do you blush at all?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Nope."

He suddenly turned around, said: "But here I submit to you."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Why?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Because I am blushing now. When I blush, I am not willing to let other people see".

Yuan Zi Xia brought out the box, and put out the set of clothes. Although these are not brand-new clothes, they actually looked gorgeous like pink clouds. She liked the bright colored clothes, and like the bright colored person.

Bai Yu-jing looked like this kind of person. He was arrogant, did as he pleased, sometimes impulsive very much like a child, sometimes shallow but also deep like the cunning fox. She knew this kind of man was not easy to cope with. When a woman wanted to capture him, it would not be easy. But she was determined to try.

Chapter 2 Part 4 - TRANSLATED BY FASTCLOCK

The restaurant was certainly not big, but it was actually a very fine dining place. The table was made of solid teak wood, inlaid with beautiful stones. There were suitable calligraphy and painting on the wall, and hanging plants with blossoming flowers by the door. As soon as a person entered the room, he could see that having the meal here would make a person feel honored. Therefore the price was more expensive than the other place, but nobody cared about it.

The three people from Green Dragon Clan, occupied a table by the door, the eyes were staring outside the door. They were obviously waiting for a person. Young Master Zhu's table was nearby the window. He already started to eat and drink extravagantly, while that man in black was like a shadow standing behind him.

"Does this customer eat?"

"He will wait for me to finish eating, then he will eat."

Let the person take the lead, and wait for the person to finish eating before being able to eat. This is a destiny which some people chose.

The Buddhist ceremony was completed, unexpectedly that two monks also had their meal in here. The light illuminated their heads that were bright like the bottle gourd. They looked like they just had their heads shaven.

In the wind that old woman's weeping sound may also be heard faintly.
Actually who died?

Why did she cry so sadly?

Did the person who broke the golden fish bowl ever made an appearance?

Why did he hide straight in the room like he did not dare to see anyone?

The tea was good, the wine was also a good wine.

Bai Yu-jing changed into a new precious blue clothes. He had drunk several glasses of wine, as if he did not have any unhappy matters to forget. Fang Longxiang actually appeared listless, drinking only a little wine, and also not eating many vegetables.

Yuan Zi Xia charmingly said: "You are eating less than a young girl."

Fang Longxiang painstakingly said with a smile: "Because I am paying for myself, I always avoid paying dearly."

Bai Yu-jing said: "I do not pay dearly."

He suddenly clapped to call a waiter and said: "Deliver several type of best food and wine for the person in the lane behind, to a person with a tattered felt hat and a shabby coat(?) ."

Fang Longxiang coldly said: "Also to the wearer of the felt hat?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "It is said that they who do not follow the seasons, may not be able to find the food to eat."

Fang Longxiang said: "Centipedes, geckos, small snakes."

Yuan Zi Xia complexion was suddenly pale, she could not bear it and must vomit.

In the room every person had secretly looked at her, even the two monks were

not an exception. Their mouths were like a vegetarian, but the eyes were certainly not of a vegetarian.

Suddenly the sound of clapped hoofs was heard. A sturdy horse stopped outside the door. The three people from Green Dragon Clan suddenly stood up. Immediately there was happy expression revealed on their faces. The person they waited for had finally come.

Fang Longxiang looked at Bai Yu-jing, lifted the wine cup and said: "I respect you a cup."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Why do you suddenly respect me?"

Fang Longxiang sighed, said: "I only fear I will not have the opportunity to give the respect again."

Bai Yu-jing smiled, said: "We might as well looked first at the person, then giving me the respect would not be too late."

With him saying that, each person's eyes were all staring at the entrance. The sturdy horse stood outside, a person came in in a hurry. A sturdy chap in the black clothes, entered in strides while sweating profusely.

The three people from Green Dragon Clan saw him, on the face revealed some disappointment, and two people actually sat down. The one who came was obviously not the person.

The one person who gave the welcome, frowned and asked: "Why."

The others could hear him say this word, but his sound suddenly changed into the low like whisper. That person who just came in was speaking in even lower voice. He only said several sentences before leaving again in a hurry.

The three people from Green Dragon Clan looked at each other. They sat down and started to drink. The anxious restless color actually could not see again on their faces. Although the person they waited for had not come, they obviously had some news. What news?

Young Master Zhu wrinkled his eyebrows anxiously, the resemblance of the restlessness others exhibited was now evident on his face.

The two monks suddenly also stood up, gathered their clothes and said: "These poor monks' account, please record in Ms. Guo's account." The monks specially ate here, certainly did not lift a finger to pay.

But for some reasons, Bai Yu-jing always thought that these two monks did not look like monks. His eyes gave the expression of thinking deeply. When they already went out, he suddenly said with a smile: "I heard you have a pair of keen eyes like a fox since you were born. I want to test you."

Fang Longxiang said: "What kind of tests?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Two matters."

Fang Longxiang sighed, said: "Test me."

Bai Yu-jing said: "You looked at those two monks, what body part was missing a moment ago?"

Yuan Zi Xia was baffled. These two monks' five senses were entirely complete, and they were not disabled persons. How could they miss anything?

Fang Longxiang had not thought all that complicated and blurted out: "Fragrant scar."

Yuan Zi Xia could not help sighed: "Your eyes are really keen, very likely they don't have fragrant scars."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Both people don't have them."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "They... Aren't they real monks?"

Bai Yu-jing smiled, said: "Reality is an illusion, the illusion is real, the genuine and the fake, why are we so earnest?"

Yuan Zi Xia pursed her lips to smile and said: "When do you also turn into a monk? How can you speak so wisely?"

Fang Longxiang said: "He not only can speak wisely like a monk, moreover he can also eat without paying." He did not let Bai Yu-jing open his mouth and also said: "You have tested one, what about the other?"

Bai Yu-jing lowered his voice and said: "Actually, do you know who the person the Green Dragon Clan people are waiting for?"

Fang Longxiang shook his head.

Bai Yu-jing said: "They are waiting for Wei Tian-ying!"

Fang Longxiang wrinkled the eyebrow immediately and said: "Wei Tian-ying? The 'Demon knife' Wei Tian-ying?"

Bai Yu-jing nodded.

Fang Longxiang changed his countenance and said: "Isn't this person already compelled by his personal enemy to go east to Fu Sang Island?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Fu Sang island is not the hell, even if he went, it's possible for him to come back."

Fang Longxiang wrinkled his eyebrows tightly and said: "Not only the knife skill of him is said to be fearful, but also he has learned Fu Sang's 'the enduring technique' (ren-zhu). He in the Green Dragon Clan is thought to be one of the fabled 'Green Dragon 12 ghosts '."

Bai Yu-jing lightly said, "I thought so."

Yuan Zi Xia her eyes focused, said: "What is the enduring technique?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "The enduring technique is a specific wugong which teaches you how to covertly injure someone, so you'd better not listen."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "But I want to listen."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Even if you want to listen, I am not able to say."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Why?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Because I do not know."

Actually he did know something about it. The enduring technique passed on from Jiu Mixian (Long distance immortal), in Virtue Manor period (mu-fu-de-chuan 幕府德川, carried forward by "the flying ape clan" and "the hidden fog talented vault", as well as the martial art masters from Fu Sang island.

Although mystical, this kind of wugong fable was accommodated by the levitation skill, the disguise skill, the internal energy, diving skill -- these wugong's deforming skill. The special skill was that they can use the space underground using animals as the tool to avoid enemy's tracing. This was divided into seven disciplines: the one's celebration, the armor celebration, the

mustard plain, the root arrival, the black one, the martial field, and the autumn leaf. The armor celebration was good at using the cats, the one's celebration was good at using the mice.

Although Bai Yu-jing understood these matters, he was actually disinclined to say them because these are too complicated. If you wanted to explain a very complicated matter to a woman, then it became an unbearable matter, precisely too clumsy.

Fang Longxiang was pondering when he suddenly asked: "How did you know they were waiting for Wei Tian-ying?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "They said so a moment ago."

Fang Longxiang said: "You could hear them talking?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "I could not hear, but I actually could see."

Yuan Zi Xia did not understand, and could not bear to ask: "They talked and you could see? How could you see?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "By looking at their lips."

Yuan Zi Xia sighed, said: "You really are a fearful person. It looks like no matter can be hidden from you."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Do you fear me?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Mmm."

Bai Yu-jing said: "If you fear me, you should listen to my words."

Yuan Zi Xia smiled. She had said the exact words to Bai Yu-jing. She gently smiled and said: "You really are not a good person."

Young Master Zhu swaggered out. "You eat in here, after finished eating go back immediately."

The man in black had dug up the food in the bowl in a hurry. He really must hurry back in a hurry.

Bai Yu-jing suddenly said, "Friend, wait, wait!" .

The man in black stopped his footsteps, but did not turn his head.

Bai Yu-jing said with a smile: "Here the wine is good, why don't you stay and drink three cups?"

The man in black had finally turned around. His face did not have any expression, but the sorrowful gesture was even deeper. He saluted with the double fist while saying: "I also want to drink very much, but it is a pity that there are also eight people in my family that have to eat."

Although this was a very simple speech, it brought an extremely unspeakable painful meaning.

Bai Yu-jing said: "Your Young Master Zhu has called you to go?"

Man in black's reply was simpler: "I fear so."

Bai Yu-jing said: "You do not want to do anything else?"

The man in black: "I only know wugong. Although I was also mixed up in jianhu world, but now..." He hang his head and low spiritedly said: "Although I am old, I do not want to die, and also cannot die."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Therefore you can only stay with Young Master Zhu?"

The man in black: "Yes."

Bai Yu-jing said: "You with him, certainly are not to protect him, but because you want him to protect you!" He said this sentence incisively with a penetrating vision.

The man in black was as if being slapped with an open palm, fell backward several steps before turning around to rush out.

Yuan Zi Xia nipped her lip and said: "You... Why do you want to hurt someone's heart like this?"

Bai Yu-jing's face also revealed a sorrowful expression.

After a very long time, he gave a long sigh and said: "Because I am not a good person..."

Nobody can clearly hear his words, because at this moment, there was suddenly a miserable shout in the silent night. The kind that made a person's blood froze. The call looked like it was coming from outside the front door. Fang Longxiang fled like an arrow step, he wielded the iron hook. With the "thud" sound, he crushed the window.

Illuminated from the front door, the lonely peaceful courtyard was large. The coffin had already been brought inside. In the center of the courtyard there had been nobody. But now, there was suddenly a person crazily rushing inside the front gate.

A monk.

The dim light showed there was no fragrant scar on his bald head. No fragrant scar, but actually there was blood! The blood that did not stop flowing and had flowed onto his face. It had flowed into his eyes, into the wrinkles at the corners of his eye. Under the dim light of night light, this face looked surreptitiously fearsome. He broke into the courtyard, and saw the broken window.

Fang Longxiang was rushing out the window. His eyes were filled with the alarm, fear, grief and indignation.

The twitching of the corners of his mouth did not stop. It was likely that he made an effort to clean his face with his hands but had injured the corners of his mouth.

As soon as Fang Longxiang got through the window, he lowered his voice: "Who is it? Who committed this violent treachery?"

This monk produced the high pitch voice and hissed: "It's Green... Green... Green..."

Fang Longxiang said: "What Green?"

This monk had not said the second word before his four limbs suddenly went into convulsion. He jumped on one foot, and fell down!

Fang Longxiang knitted his brows and muttered: "What is green? ... Green Dragon?"

He slowly turned his head. The three people from Green Dragon Clan formed a row under the eaves. They looked like they were also very startled.

The blood slowly flowed off from the top of the head, and gradually

coagulated. It revealed a golden flash that Fang Longxiang squatted down immediately and turned the head to the light to see the source of the flash. He saw a golden link immediately. The seven inches diameter golden link, embedded in the head, only partially seen.

Fang Longxiang finally understood why this monk was acting crazily and fearfully a moment ago. A seven-inch diameter golden link, if inserted in anybody's head, this person would become crazy immediately.

Bai Yu-jing knitted his brows and said: "Red Hair Clan's golden link?"

Fang Longxiang nodded, stood up, the eyes were staring at the opposite third door and muttered: "Why does he have to kill this monk?"

"Why don't you go and ask him?" The person who spoke was Young Master Zhu.

He was also obviously alarmed by the miserable call, went out in a hurry, and now were shouldering both hands, standing beneath the lamp. That man in black shadowed him closely.

Fang Longxiang looked at him and lightly said: "When did the Million Gold Hall and the Red Hair Clan become enemies?"

Young Master Zhu said, "Enemies? Who said the Million Gold Hall has a grudge with their red hairs monster?"

Fang Longxiang said: "How did the golden fish bowl get broken?"

Young Master Zhu smiled, said: "Perhaps they have a grudge about the goldfish... ... Why don't you go ask him?"

Fang Longxiang said: "You want me to ask him?"

Young Master Zhu said that, "It is up to you."

Fang Longxiang was sneering, suddenly passed through. The third door was always closed, but actually somehow there shone a light coming through it.

Fang Longxiang had not knocked on a door, the door was opened. A person stood in the entrance, on his ear were two golden links with "the ting-a-ling" sound, his eyes were fiery.

Fang Longxiang looked at the golden links on his ear: "Miao Dongzhu?"

Miao Shaotian in a calm face said: "Boss Fang has really good eyesight."

Fang Longxiang said: "A moment ago... ..."

Miao Shaotian: "I was eating a moment ago. When I ate meal, I never kill people."

On the table there was golden tray, with a half-shed skin snake on it. There was some blood on the corners of Miao Shaotian's mouth.

Fang Longxiang's suddenly felt contraction, it looked like he was eating a poisonous snake.

Miao Shaotian cast a glance at Young Master Zhu in the courtyard with the corner of his eye. He coldly said: "Don't forget as long as the person has the golden link, he can throw the golden link. As long as the person has the hands, he can use the golden link to kill people."

Fang Longxiang nodded, he could not open his mouth for fear that he would vomit.

In the room next door, the great pitiful weeping sound faintly continued.

Miao Shaotian closed the door with a "thud". He continued to enjoy his rich supper.

The three people from Green Dragon Clan have drawn back.

Yuan Zi Xia hold on Bai Yu-jing's hand tightly. She feared that he would be able to sneak off suddenly. The monk's corpse had become stiff.

Fang Longxiang knitted his brows and said: "Who has killed him? Why he has to kill him?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Because he is a false monk."

Fang Longxiang said: "False monk? Why do some people have to kill a false monk?"

Nobody could reply to these words.

Fang Longxiang sighed, painstakingly said with a smile: "If I'm any good, there is also a dead monk outside."

Bai Yu-jing said: "A dead false monk?"

Chapter 2 Part 5 - TRANSLATED BY FASTCLOCK

Yuan Zi Xia held on to Bai Yu-jing's hands, and walked inside the tiny pavilion.

Her hand was icy cold.

Bai Yu-jing said: "You are cold?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I am not cold, but afraid. Why could so many fearful people come to this place?"

Bai Yu-jing smiled and said: "Perhaps they all come for you."

Yuan Zi Xia complexion was paler and said: "For me?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "The more fearful is a person, the more attractive is the woman he likes."

Yuan Zi Xia smiled and said: "You? How could you not be a very fearful person also?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "I..."

He suddenly discovered that Yuan Zi Xia's door was open. He remembered when they went downstairs, they closed the door and also kept the light on.

Yuan Zi Xia had brought six or seven convenient boxes. Some women did not let a man see her things, especially scattered all over the place. Yuan Zi Xia was ashamed, also anxious, afraid, before she blurted out: "There is ... is a thief."

Bai Yu-jing's hand shoved open the next door. It was more chaotic in his room. Yuan Zi Xia did not let him look again, and had pulled him along outside. First most, she could not let some the items be seen by men, her face blushing to the ears.

Bai Yu-jing said: "What thing I cannot see?"

Yuan Zi Xia blushed, said: "I..... I am fine... I don't have anything worthy stolen."

Bai Yu-jing sneered said: "Perhaps there was no thief."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Why didn't the thief come to other rooms and randomly turn the things upside down?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "It looks like they are really looking for me."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Looking for you? Who? Why do they have to look for you?"

Bai Yu-jing had not replied, he passed through and shoved open the rear window.

In the misty small lane, there was nobody.

Beggars for food, hawksellers, the hunchback with the felt hat, all did not know where they went.

Bai Yu-jing said: "I will go to have a look."

He just turned around, Yuan Zi Xia's broke through and held on to his hand. She said: "You.... Surely do not have to walk, I.... I.... I would die if no one else stay in this room."

Bai Yu-jing sighed, said: "But I... ... "

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I ask you, I ask you, now I am in really awful fear."

Her face was pale like paper, the bountiful chest was heaving incessantly.

Bai Yu-jing looked at her, his eyes softened and said: "Now you are really in awful fear?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Mmm."

Bai Yu-jing said: "A moment ago?"

Yuan Zi Xia hung her head, said: "A moment ago... I deceived you a little a moment ago."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Why has to deceive?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Because I..."

Her pale face was also red, suddenly made an effort to beat his chest, said: "Why do you have to compel other people to say? You really are not a good person."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Since I am not a good person, you also dare to let me stay in the room?"

Yuan Zi Xia's face was redder, said: "I... ... I will yield the bed to you, I will rest on the floor.

Bai Yu-jing said: "Am I cruel enough to let you rest on the floor?"

Yuan Zi Xia nipped her lips and said: "It's no concern, as long as you are willing to stay behind, nothing is of any concern."

Bai Yu-jing said: "On your bed."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "No ... "

Chapter 2 Part 6 - TRANSLATED BY FASTCLOCK

Yuan Zi Xia rested on the bed.

Bai Yu-jing also rested on the bed.

They took off the shoes to lie down on the bed. Without the shoes, the other clothes were actually still being worn properly.

After a very long time, Yuan Zi Xia only then gently sighed, said: "I have not thought you are really such a person."

Bai Yu-jing said: "I have not thought so too."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "You... Don't you fear some people might come in?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Totally not."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Totally not?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Although I am not a gentleman, I am also not a villain who takes advantage of somebody's precarious position."

He stretched out his hands and gently caressed her hands. He said in a supple voice: "Perhaps because I like you, therefore I do not want to bully you, much less in this kind of situation which I creates myself."

Yuan Zi Xia focused her eyes, said: "Do you intentionally call these people to frighten me?"

Bai Yu-jing painstakingly said with a smile: "I might, but actually they are indeed looking for me."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Why do they look for you?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Because there is an item on my body which they want very much."

Yuan Zi Xia with undulating eyes said: "Do you think I want such a thing, and only then I would look for you?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "I never have such a thought."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "If I ask you?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Then I will give you."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Gives such thing to me?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Mmm."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Such thing being so precious, why are you willing to give to me so casually?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Regardless of any thing, so long as you open your mouth, I will give you immediately."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Really?" '

Bai Yu-jing said: "I now give you."

He really has put his hand inside his bosom.

Yuan Zi Xia suddenly crossed his body, and grasped him tight. Her whole body was filled with the sentiment and gently said: "I do not want anything, as long as you accompany me. . ." Her sound was mixed with sobs, the tears had

suddenly flowed down.

Bai Yu-jing said: "You are crying?"

Yuan Zi Xia nodded, said: "Because I am too happy."

She dried the tears on her face that fell on Bai Yu-jing's face. She said, "There are some words I have to tell you first."

Bai Yu-jing said: "You say that, I will listen."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I secretly run away from my family, because my mother compel me to marry a rich old man." This was a very ordinary story, which was also a very vulgar story. But in this kind of story, actually did not know how many people's bitter tears were shed. As long as there were mothers who were greedy for money, and lascivious old men in this world, this kind of story will continue to occur forever.

Yuan Zi Xia said: "When I run away, I only brought a little jewelry with me. Now actually everything has already been sold."

Bai Yu-jing was listening.

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I have not worked for money before, therefore ... therefore I want to look for a man." The woman could not live by herself, she would usually want to look for a man. This kind of matter also would never change.

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I found you at the time, certainly it was not because I liked you, only because I thought you looked very competent, you certainly could give me livelihood."

Bai Yu-jing was smiling, a forced smile.

Yuan Zi Xia gently sighed, said: "But at present, things are different."

Bai Yu-jing said: "What is different?"

His sound had burst out in pain.

Yuan Zi Xia in a supple voice: "Now I knew that, I cannot find a better man compared to you forever. I can find you, it is really my luck, I.. I am really happy."

Her tears flowed off, she tightly held him. She said: "As long as you are willing, I will give you anything, I won't leave you all my life..."

Bai Yu-jing could not help, but also grasped her closely, in a soft voice: "Do I want you? How could I not want you."

Yuan Zilu smiled through her tears, said: "You are willing to lead me away?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "From now henceforth, regardless of what I do, I will certainly lead you away."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Really?"

She did not let Bai Yu-jing open his mouth by covering up his mouth. She said: "I know you might get mad, but I only ask you to not go with these people. We may pay no attention to them, and secretly go."

Bai Zhujing was kissing the tear stains on her face lightly and said: "I promise you, I certainly will make every effort to no longer go with them."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "We now go away?"

Bai Yu-jing sighed: "Now I only fear they will not be willing to let us leave."

But if we wait until early morning tomorrow, I certainly will have the method to lead you away, so later nobody will be able to trouble us again."

Yuan Zi Xia smiled, her eyes were filled with joy and also with the expectancy of future happiness. She had finally obtained what she wanted. A beautiful woman with her fine institution, why it did not happen more frequently that she could obtain her wish?

END OF CHAPTER 2

Chapter 3: An endless night - TRANSLATED BY FASTCLOCK

Chapter 3 Part 1

Just as the stars would rise, it would also set. The earth was silent, even in the calm the sound of water movement on the lake could be heard.

The lantern by the front door would gently sway in the breeze as its light flickered in the wind.

Yuan Zi Xia curled up in Bai Yu-jing's bosom. She had gradually fallen asleep.

She was really too weary, weary like a lost pigeon, which finally had found her safety perch.

Perhaps she was not sleepy originally, but the view gradually disappeared, the gentle and happy darkness finally hugged her.

Bai Yu-jing looked at her, at her upright nose and long eyelashes. His hand was caressing her waist lightly.

Then his hand suddenly stopped and rested in her lap.

He had not made an effort, but gently had actually let her sweetly sleep until the daybreak.

Thereupon he quietly got out of bed, wore his boots, and quietly walked away.

How could he feel relieved leaving her behind in the room, didn't he fear these people might injure her? He did not fear.

Because he had determined that he must first look for these people, he was determined to solve this matter before the daybreak.

At that time he would lead her away.

He had promised her.

He was not a pigeon, but a hawk. But he was also too weary to fly, and he also wanted a safe place for him to perch.

The lights were dim. The grids of wisteria flowers in the courtyard were colorful, but the flowers were also bent in the wind.

Bai Yu-jing put on his boots, the old boots that were comfortable.

His heart was at peace, because he knew he had made the toughest decision. His life afterwards would all be changed.

What was strange, when a person made the most significant change, it usually was decided in a flash.

This was not because this kind of emotion was too intense, therefore it only came so quickly! The original love arose suddenly, but only with the friendship could it accumulated and grew deeper.

Fang Longxiang was in the tiny pavilion.

Bai Yu-jing just passed through the door that was opened by Fang Long Xiang. He stood looking at him at the entrance.

He looked so obviously like he had not rested well.

Bai Yu-jing said: "There is a woman in your room?"

Fang Longxiang said: "Today is not a good day. Therefore although this place will continually have women, suddenly it lacks the goods."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Why don't you marry a wife, so to avoid not being able to sleep in this kind of time."

Fang Longxiang said: "I am not insane."

Bai Yu-jing said: "I am actually insane."

Fang Longxiang said: "Each man would unavoidably go insane occasionally. So long as he can be sobered promptly, that's good."

Bai Yu-jing smiled, he just smiled.

He knew his own present sentiment. It was not what Xiao Fang's kind of person could understand.

Fang Longxiang had also smiled, said: "But I had not thought you would need a friend, tonight unexpectedly you still look for me."

Bai Yu-jing said: "I am not looking for you, I want you to look for a person."

Fang Longxiang said: "Who to look for?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Do you know where the hunchback with the felt hat and the sellers have gone to?"

Fang Longxiang wrinkled his eyebrows: "They have not gone looking for you, on the contrary you must go look for them?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Don't you understand about making the first move and taking control?"

Fang Longxiang thought, said: "Perhaps I may not be able to find them."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Good, you ask them to come here, while I eat in the hall and wait."

Fang Longxiang looked at him, somewhat hesitated, also with some suspicion. He could not bear to ask: "What are you planning to do?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "I only want to deliver a thing to them."

Fang Longxiang said: "What thing?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "If they want anything, I will give them anything."

Fang Longxiang sighed, said: "Right, I will look. I only hope you do not commit murder there, or be killed, so I still may get my food down later."

Chapter 3 Part 2

Young Master Zhu was also resting.

Suddenly, the window was shaken with a "thud", and a person stood by the window. In a flash, this person arrived in front of his bed, in the hand the knife's scabbard had touched his throat.

"Walk with me."

Young Master Zhu could only start walking.

He never thought there was such skill in the world. When he went out the door, that man in black shadow followed behind him. He was not there to protect him, he wanted to be protected.

He went out the door, and discovered Miao Shaotian and that three people from Green Dragon Clan had stood in the courtyard. Their complexion certainly was many more times more sullen than him.

The lamps were ignited. Ten lamps.

The light although was bright, but each person's complexion actually was all very ugly.

Bai Yu-jing was actually the exception.

His face had even a smile.

It was a pity nobody looked at his face, each person was staring at his sword.

The used scabbard, and the similarly old sword handle bound on satin. No

one could see the original color.

"This is the sword that certainly has killed many people."

In this used scabbard, there was a sword, certainly a much sharper one. Because this was the most fearful sword in jiang-hu.

Longevity sword!

He only killed, nobody could cross him when he killed!

Young Master Zhu suddenly regretted offending Miao Shaotian, otherwise if they collaborate, perhaps there was hope, but now...

Now he suddenly saw the white horse Zhang San and Zhao Yi-dao walked, these two people also were first-class masters in jiang-hu without a doubt.

Young Master Zhu's eyes were filled with hope immediately.

Everyone knew there were only two different choices.

To kill! Or to be killed!

Chapter 3 Part 3

Everyone was mistaken.

Bai Yu-jing also knew they were mistaken. He intentionally lowered his face and said: "I have known the reason why everyone of you come here."

No one made any reply.

These are worldly-wise people in this room. Unless necessary, the worldly-wise people were not willing to open their mouth to speak.

When Bai Yu-jing said this speech, he had also stopped down. He stared at Young Master Zhu, then after looking at everyone, he saw Zhao Yi-dao directly. Then, he slowly said: "Who am I, everyone also knows?"

Everyone nodded. Their eyes could not help casting a glance toward that sword handle.

Bai Yu-jing suddenly smiled, said: "Everyone wants something that is with me." Each person's eyes grew bigger. There was hope, desire, greed in the eyes.

The white horse Zhang San was originally a very outstanding talented man, but at the present he suddenly could not say anything witty.

Only that man in black did not have any expression on his face, because his heart did not have any desire. He was originally a very ugly person, but in this group of person, he suddenly appeared to become quite lovable.

Bai Yu-jing said: "If everyone wants such item, it will be very simple, as long as everyone agrees to my request."

Young Master Zhu could not bear to say: "What request?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "After taking such item, everyone walks away immediately. From this time on, no one must look for me again."

Everybody's eyes grew bigger in surprise and interest.

Who could think that his condition was unexpectedly so simple and easy.

Young Master Zhu lightly coughed again twice. He said reluctantly with a smile: "We and Bai zi-xia (young hero Bai) have not enjoyed a good friendship. Bai-zi, as long as we can attain such item, we will walk away immediately, and will not dare to disturb Bai-zi again."

Zhao Yi-dao nodded immediately to express his agreement.

The white horse Zhang San and the three people from Green Dragon Clan certainly did not have any words to say.

Miao Shaotian actually had some words to say.

He suddenly asked: "Actually I do not know to whom Bai-zi plan to give such item?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "This is your problem. You best discuss it first."

The white horse Zhang San looked at Miao Shaotian, and also at Young Master Zhu without speaking.

The three people from Green Dragon Clan appeared to have something to say, but they just rolled their eyes and waited.

Young Master Zhu suddenly said that, "This item came from the Green Dragon Clan, naturally we should give it to the eldest brothers from Green Dragon Clan."

Zhao Yi-dao clapped his hands and said: "Good. That makes sense."

The three people from Green Dragon Clan also immediately stood up and gave them one salute.

The person said: "The two of you speak out from a sense of justice. The Green Dragon Clan does not dare to forget the favor from two of you."

Zhao Yi-dao raised his hand and said: "No problem."

Young Master Zhu smiles said: "Million Gold Hall will want the help of Green Dragon Clan in the future, the three eldest brothers need not be so polite."

Although this young master seemed to eat all day, but when he spoke, he showed his astute experience and showed that he was a very capable businessman.

He knew when to trim one's sails, remained opportunistic. It seemed like he had known these matters since he was born.

Miao Shaotian stared at him maliciously. Although he refused to accept in his heart, he had no alternative.

Bai Yu-jing said: "So, this matter is settled?"

Miao Shaotian: "Humph."

Bai Yu-jing after a long sigh, put out from his bosom a woven bundle of gold, and threw it on the table nonchalantly.

No matter what the pouch might look like, the value in this woven bag did not look like small.

Nevertheless he carelessly threw it like throwing out thrash.

Everybody's eyes were staring at this woven bag, the faces were tense. No one were able to say any words.

Bai Yu-jing coldly said: "The item is already on the table, why don't you take it away?"

The three people from Green Dragon Clan looked at each other, one of them went and untied the woven bag with shaking hands.

Several dozens type of colored items came out rolling on the table. There were the Persian cat eye stone, India's gem, with beautiful jade, and big pearls.

All had shone brightly like the light.

Bai Yu-jing languidly leaned on the chair. He looked at this pile of jewelry with a very strange expression in his eyes.

These things did not come easily, but he was willing to pay the price.

He understood very much what they represent - good wine, magnificent clothes, clean comfortable beds, gentle beautiful woman, and the respect that came from the envy of other men.

These were precisely what constituted an essential need of men. But presently, he had discarded them. There was not even a slight regret in his heart.

Because he knew he had obtained well.

Because all the wealth in the world could not fill up a lonely heart.

And now he was no longer lonely and empty.

The wealth hung on the balance on the table. What is strange, no one present put out a hand take it.

What was stranger, everyone's eyes were not bright looking at them, instead they looked very disappointed.

Bai Yu-jing moved forward and saw them. He frowned: "What else do you want?"

Young Master Zhu shook his head.

The three people from Green Dragon Clan also shook their heads.

Young Master Zhu suddenly said that, "Bai-zi wait here for a moment. We will go and then come here again immediately."

Bai Yu-jing said: "What else do you want to discuss?"

Young Master Zhu reluctantly says with a smile: "A small minor matter."

Bai Yu-jing looked at them hesitating. He finally let them leave.

All people have left.

Bai Yu-jing sneered at these people. He didn't have any fear at all and he

didn't fear they have any clever plot trick whatsoever.

He had willingly paid the price, only because he wanted to lead her away from here. Because he was not willing to let her receive anymore fright or injury.

It was not because he was not willing to get injured, if it had to come to that. To think otherwise was a really stupid laughable matter.

What did they now want? But, he was also not fully correct in his assumptions.

The window was open.

He could see their movement. No one had gone to the tiny pavilion. That tiny pavilion was very peaceful.

She certainly rested very sweetly.

When she was resting, she looked just like a baby. Pure and happy.

Bai Yu-jing's corners of his mouth were unable to restrain revealing a happy expression - suddenly, all people unexpectedly came back. Each one had a cloth bag, which they put on the table. They started untying the knots.

The white horse Zhang San brought a bucket of pearls.

Miao Shaotian had a pack of golden leaves.

The Green Dragon had a box of silver.

Young Master Zhu provided brand-new money papers.

These things, regardless of which one, all represented great wealth. Their value was not under Bai Yu-jing's jewelry at all.

Bai Yu-jing could not bear to ask: "What does it mean?"

Young Master Zhu stood up, said: "This is our show of respect, please Bai-zi accepts."

Bai Yu-jing was hardly a person that showed his feeling, but now, he was actually unable to restrain his astonishment.

They did not want his jewelry, instead they were giving him their wealth.

This was for what? He also could not think through.

Young Master Zhu coughed gently and was saying, "We... We also want to request a matter from Bai-zi."

Bai Yu-jing said: "What matter?"

Young Master Zhu said that, "How long does Bai-zi plan to stay here?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "I must go at dawn."

Young Master Zhu's face cleared and he said with a smile: "That is extremely good."

Bai Yu-jing said: "You said about requesting a matter?"

Young Master Zhu said with a smile: "If Bai-zi already wants to go, there is no other matter."

Bai Yu-jing was astounded.

He originally thought they did not want him to leave, who knew them actually hope he would quickly go. Instead, they also would rather give him wealth.

Why was this? He could not think through.

Young Master Zhu was hesitating. He said: "But, we do not know whether Bai-zi will go with someone else?"

Bai Yu-jing suddenly understood.

They were not looking for him, but Yuan Zi Xia. Only because they had problems with his long sword, they did not dare to start their move until now.

They did not hesitate to pay such a great price to get her, what was their actual object for her?

If she were only a girl who was running away from marriage and had left in a hurry, how would she have met so many prestigious martial arts world master? Were they all lies what she said? Did she say such things, only to move him, so he wanted to protect her? Was it because of this reason that she asked him to ignore these people, and just go with her quietly? Bai Yu-jing's heart had sunk.

Everyone was looking at him, waiting for his reply.

On the table there were jewelry and gold, flashing and dazzling under the lamp is. But actually nobody was looking at them.

What they want was something that had a much bigger value.

What was it? Was it Yuan Zi Xia herself, or something that she had?

Young Master Zhu looked at the expression on his face, and probed, "Bai-zi and that Yuan girl, only met by chance. Bai-zi certainly would not offend a friend for her."

Bai Yu-jing coldly said: "You are not my friend."

Young Master Zhu said with a smile: "We do not dare to seek friendships with somebody of a higher social standing. But a woman like the Yuan girl, Bai-zi will certainly meet many later on, why..."

Bai Yu-jing had cut him off and said: "What you want is not her?"

Young Master Zhu had smiled

Bai Yu-jing said: "Actually I am not sure what you want?"

Young Master Zhu's eyes flashed, "Bai-zi does not know?"

Bai Yu-jing shook his head.

Young Master Zhu's face revealed a treacherous smile. He was picking his words slowly obviously in fear of Bai Yu-jing. Maybe Bai-zi might not want to come to their cup of thick soup once he knew everything. Therefore, he was reluctant to say anything.

The value of this thing was without a doubt bigger than here all the gold and other different treasures.

Bai Yu-jing actually could not think through.

What was such a precious thing on Yuan Zi Xia's person? Her entire room had been ransacked by them.

Young Master Zhu said that, "In my opinion, Bai-zi does not need to consider this matter. If you had such amount of money and jewelries, wouldn't you have any problem finding another beautiful woman that looked like an angel?"

Bai Yu-jing slowly picked up his own jewelry bag, and return it to his pocket.

Then he walked away.

He no longer need to say anything, just walked.

Everyone's eyes were at him. Although they harbored resentment at him, nobody dared to make a move.

Because they also must wait for a person, who could cope with the longevity sword.

They have confidence in this person.

Chapter 3 Part 4

The endless night will end eventually.

It was the darkest part before the daybreak, but the air was actually cold and refreshing.

Bai Yu-jing walked on the ground, taking a long breathe – He suddenly discovered the light in the tiny pavilion's window had been screened by two shadows.

A person's shadow was slender and elegant, Yuan Zi Xia.

But another person? The two people's shadows were far away but yet seemed so near.

Were they discussing anything?

Young Master Zhu, Zhao Yi-dao, Miao Shaotian, the white horse Zhang San, and the three people from Green Dragon Clan were all in the building on the first floor.

Who was in the pavilion? Bai Yu-jing was gripping his sword tightly, his hands were colder than his scabbard.

He really did not know whether he should go upstairs or not.

END OF CHAPTER 3

Chapter 4: A Stiff Corpse - TRANSLATED BY FASTCLOCK

It was not an endless night.

The wind actually brought the news that daybreak was coming. It became more refreshing and colder.

Bai Yu-jing calmly stood in the cold wind.

He hoped the colder was the wind, the more sober was his mind.

When he was 13 years-old, he started to roam about in jianghu. It had been 14 years now.

For these 14 years, he was continuously sober, therefore he could continue living until now.

Regardless of the previous experiences he had to suffer, the attacks and the dangers, if he wanted to live on, that would not be easy.

"Immortal man carried me high, bridging issues to obtain the longevity." (?)

In his heart, he was sneering.

He had heard his stories in jianghu. He felt at the present just like in some of those stories. He needed his brain to continue working, while maintaining calm.

Now he needed to be calm.

In the window, one the shadows walked nearer.

He avoided guessing who this person was as much as possible, because he was not willing to suspect his own friend.

Xiao Fang was his friend.

Since other people were all on the first floor, who would be in the pavilion besides Fang Longxiang?

Xiao Fang was also a man who had a lot of attraction without a doubt. Perhaps he had more strength to protect her compared to him.

If she went to Xiao Fang's bosom, he also should not feel too much sorrow. Because between themselves, there was no written contract after all.

"If things took an opposing direction, little opposition would not produce a lot of worry."

Bai Yu-jing heaved a long sigh and forced himself to no longer think about this matter anymore. But he wasn't immune to the fact that his heart had been punctured by a needle, punctured very deeply. He was determined that he had to walk. Actually walking away quietly was good, because nothing in the world worth so much to think too earnestly.

He slowly had turned around.

But at this moment, he suddenly heard Yuan Zi Xia's call out in alarm.

There was alarm and fear in the call like a person who saw a poisonous snake.

Bai Yu-jing flew like an arrow to the pavilion, with "crash", he hit the window. In the room, there were two people.

Yuan Zi Xia's face was really pale, even more afraid than seeing a poisonous snake."

She was looking at a person on the opposite. This person was indeed more

fearful than the poisonous snake.

His long hair was creepy, the body was stiff, there was blood dripping on his face; he looked very much like a corpse.

This person was not Xiao Fang .

In a flash, Bai Yu-jing felt really sorry in his heart. A person really should not suspect his friend.

But now was not the time to get depressed again.

He just broke through the window, when this corpse had lashed a whip to him.

The whip points were like a spirited snake. It was quick.

This corpse's wugong was unexpectedly equal to jianghu's master.

Bai Yu-jing body flew high, but he also could not draw back. As he was incapable of fending against the change, the whip noticeably started to curl around his throat.

But there was nobody in the world whose whip could curl around his throat.

As soon as his hand was raised, instantly, the scabbard had tied down the long whip tightly.

His other hand has drawn out the sword like lightning.

The sword light was silver, glistening color, so bright that one nearly could not keep the eyes open.

With his toes on the base of the window, the mercury sword light had cut to this corpse.

This corpse's long whip let him go, to fly back due to from failure.

However a cold feeling came by the cold stars filling the sky, like the rainstorm scattering towards Bai Yu-jing.

Bai Yu-jing sword light moved back and forth, the cold stars that filled the sky suddenly disappeared.

But by now the corpse had moved towards the window.

How could Bai Yu-jing let him leave?

He viewed his surrounding, the corner of his eye actually glimpsed Yuan Zi Xia unexpectedly had fainted from fear.

Considering those people downstairs, he could not let her remain here.

Should he pursue? Or should he not?

In this flash of moment, it was very difficult for him decide. Luckily by now, he had heard Xiao Fang's voice: "What's matter?"

"I give her ... "

He had not spoken a word, but this person had fled through window like an arrow.

Who knew a corpse that was so stiff like wood, could propel himself like a meteor.

When Bai Yu-jing answered the question, he had gone outside 70-80 feet. The shadow of the person was gone in a flash.

Bai Yu-jing pursued after him, but he had disappeared.

The rooster's crow resounded in the distant place.

Is he really a corpse? When the rooster crowed, he can mystically vanish?

The east has shown a misty bluish color, the horizon was more visible.

Neighboring the spacious courtyard was the woods that were about 300 feet away.

It was impossible for anybody to go 300-400 feet in a flash. Even in the former days, the world number one in levitation skill, Chu Xiang-shi, did not have this kind of ability!

The wind was colder.

Bai Yu-jing stood in the ridge, calmly thinking. He suddenly jumped.

There were four rooms in the side building downstairs. The third one was the place where Miao Shaotian lived. Now, it was very quiet, all the lights were extinguished.

In the second room, there was a solitary lamp.

In this dreary light, a person's shadow silhouetted the window. Looking at the shape of the person, this would be that wailing hunchbacked gray old lady.

She was obviously sad because of her family member's death. Maybe even so late at night, she could not go to sleep. Perhaps she was not mourning the others' death, but was just sad thinking about her own life.

When a person came to the old age, he could be very sensitive and fear death specially.

Bai Yu-jing stood outside the window, calmly looking at her. He could not bear to sigh gently.

It was strange that when a person was sad, he was more keen to some feelings.

In the room some people were asking immediately, "Who is it?"

"I."

"Who are you?"

Before Bai Yu-jing replied, the door had opened.

This wailing gray old lady, with her hand on the door and the hunchback behind her, was standing in the entrance. She was with suspicion but the eyes with resentment were taking him in. She asked: "Who are you? What do you want?"

Bai Yu-jing was hesitating, he said: "A moment ago, someone seemed to run away to this place. I don't know whether he had alarm you or others?"

The old lady's resentment showed, "A person? This is very late at night. Where can this person be, are sure you are not fantasizing?"

Bai Yu-jing knew her mood was not good, and her resentment was rising. He placated with a smile and said: "Perhaps I was mistaken, I'm sorry."

He unexpectedly did not say anything else. He joined his fist in respect and turned around to go down the courtyard. It was a long extended moment, as if he was extremely weary.

At this moment, he heard "thump".

That old lady, who was weary, had became pale and greenish with sorrow. She was like a box with a gunpowder inside her. Suddenly, it exploded and struck

her down.

Bai Yu-jing flew up the steps to hug her.

Her pulse was still beating, and she was breathing. Only it was all very weak.

Bai Yu-jing breathe a sigh of relief. He gave some immediate first aid. After a very long time, there was redness gradually on her pale face. The pulse has also gradually returned to normal.

But her eyes and the mouth were still shut. The corners of her mouth did not stop leaking the saliva.

Bai Yu-jing lightly said: "Old woman, wake up -"

The old lady suddenly put out a long sigh, the eyes had also opened. She was looking at Bai Yu-jing, but it was as if she had not seen anything.

Bai Yu-jing said: "There is no problem, Once you go and lie down, everything will be all right."

The old lady was struggling and panting for breath. She said: "You just go. You don't need to take care of me."

But in this kind of situation, how could Bai Yu-jing just leave here like that?

He could not avoid the trouble and carried her inside.

Perhaps this was his first time holding up a woman older than 30 years-old.

The coffin was lying in the room, the square table was full of money papers (?), with two select round candles, and three incense sticks.

The incense smoke was winding, the candlelight was gloomy, the whole room was filled with gloomy misery. That young boy's body curled on the table, like a sleeping dead person.

When a child was resting, even if the sky collapsed, he would be very difficult to awaken.

Bai Yu-jing hesitated. He did not know where he should put this old lady.

Suddenly, the old lady's body turned around in his bosom, two clawing fingernails had blocked his throat.

She acted not only quickly, but also really powerfully.

Bai Yu-jing's breathing stopped immediately, the eyeballs wanted to jump out of his eyes.

His sword was inserted in the waistband a moment ago. At this moment, even if he could hold his sword handle, he would not have the strength to draw it out.

The old lady's face revealed a fiendish grin. The sad, weary, old face, suddenly changed into a wicked wolf. Her fingers gradually closed. She fiendishly grinned while saying: "The longevity sword, you die! "

She had completed her words, she suddenly felt an ice-cold thing against her ribs.

It was the handle of a sword.

She looked again at Bai Yu-jing's face. Not only there was distortion on it, but instead it looked like he was smiling. She suddenly felt her grip on the neck didn't feel like it was a person's neck, but a snake's soft skin. Then there was also a sharp sting of stabbing pain, which caused her ten fingers to gradually

loosen up.

The sword was already in Bai Yu-jing's hand.

The sword point pricked her ribs, the blood had seeped out, dyeing the new clothes which she had just exchanged.

Bai Yu-jing looked at her, smiled and said: "Your playacting was good. It's a pity you can't hide the truth from me."

The old lady's eyes were filled with fear. She tremblingly said: "You... ... You already know?"

Bai Yu-jing said with a smile: "A genuine old lady, certainly could not awake that quickly. She also could not be so heavy."

The sword light flashed paring a piece of her hair.

Under the gray white hair, the hair was unexpectedly luminous pitch-black and smooth like silk.

The old lady sighed, said: "How do you know an old lady so well?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "I know."

He certainly knew, he had hugged so many women. Very few people would have more experience than him.

An old lady's muscles were frail, the bones would also be light. As soon as he carried her, he knew she could not be more than 35 years old.

A 35 years-old woman, if she maintained herself, the tone of the body would still be elastic.

The old lady said that, "Now what do you want?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "I had to look at you."

The old lady said that, "Look at me?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "I'm looking at you to see whether you're obedient?"

The old lady said, "I am always obedient."

Her eyes suddenly revealed an enchanting alluring expression. She rubbed her hands on the face, and some dusts drizzled down.

A mature, beautiful, and extremely graceful face appeared.

Bai Yu-jing sighed, said: "You really are not an old lady."

This woman smiled charmingly and said: "Who said I am old?"

Her hand was working on the buttons, before she slowly has pulled open on the hemp clothes.

Underneath the clothes, there was a rich, supple, mature and attractive body. All parts were not beneath the chest. Bai Yu-jing looked at her chest. There were two peaks on her chest that had become very hard.

She lightly nipped at her lips and said in a supple voice: "Now you ought to see, I have always been obedient"

Bai Yu-jing could only acknowledged.

She charmingly smiled and said: "I can see that you are an experienced man."

Why do you just stand around like a child."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Do you want to do it here?"

She smiled flatteringly and said: "Why is here not good? The old ghost had died, the little rascal had slept like a dead person. As long as you close the door..."

The door was open.

Bai Yu-jing could not help but look at her face.

Suddenly, the child that had slept like a dead person leapt up. He stood up quickly and shot ten starstorms. This child had acted unexpectedly and also so quickly. The most fearful part was certainly nobody could think such a child could act so vicious, much less Bai Yu-jing who was facing a naked woman.

In the world, there was nothing that can change the man's sharpness like a naked beautiful woman!

These scattered secret weapons would, without a doubt, prove to be fatal.

But Bai Yu-jing seemed to have calculated this. With a sword light, these fatal secret weapons had disappeared.

The woman nipped her tooth, and said severely: "The good boy, the old lady will help you."

That child leaped up and unexpectedly had drawn out two pointed knives from the pillow. He threw one to the woman. Two pointed knives like two lightning immediately to Bai Yu-jing.

At this moment, the coffin cover suddenly raised, a whip like a poisonous snake came out, curling towards Bai Yu-jing's waist area.

This whip was truly fatal!

Bai Yu-jing's waist was threatened by the whip, while the two knives were moving quickly towards him.

He completely did not have any leeway to fend himself!

He did not fend, instead he had welcomed the knives.

The person in the coffin had an enormous strength when he moved. He was precisely the vanishing corpse just a moment ago.

She saw the two knives piercing towards Bai Yu-jing's body, who knew suddenly a miracle revealed itself. They seemed to work, but then fell down.

The woman and the child already had blood-stained mouths.

Bai Yu-jing's sword was the miracle.

The sword light flashed, truncated the two knives of the two persons. At the same time, it moved again to cut down the long whip.

The corpse originally was making an effort to gain the whip. When the whip broke, he lost his balance immediately. He fell with a "thud" by the window.

The child and the woman called out in alarm. Bai Yu-jing had backhanded a timely fist and hit the child's stomach. In the dark, he had felt little pain and already fainted.

That woman's face was distorted full of fear. She turned around to run away.

Her body just moved, Bai Yu-jing's sword handle had knocked her head – she fainted faster than the child.

The corpse had his back on the window. He looked at Bai Yu-jing, with the color of fear in his eyes.

He nearly did not believe if he didn't see it himself that he was facing a person who could act so quickly.

Bai Yu-jing was also looking at him and coldly said: "Why didn't you run away?"

The corpse suddenly gave a long sigh and said: "I have not offended you, why do I have to run away?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Indeed, you have not offended me. You just want my life."

The corpse said: "That is also because you forced us."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Oh?"

The corpse said: "All I want is only the item that that woman deceived from me."

Bai Yu-jing frowned and said: "What item did she deceive from you?"

The corpse said: "A secret map."

Bai Yu-jing said: "A secret map! What secret map? A secret treasure map?"

The corpse said: "No."

Bai Yu-jing said: "No?"

The corpse said: "This map itself is a buried treasure. Regardless of who had this map, not only he may become the richest person in the world, but he also may become the most powerful person in the world."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Why?"

The corpse said: "You don't need to ask me why. As long as you let me off, I will help you find this map."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Oh."

The corpse said: "I only know that this map is with her."

Bai Yu-jing was hesitating. He suddenly smiled and said: "Since it was certainly with her, why do I need you to help me find it?"

The corpse said: "Because she wouldn't tell you the truth, she wouldn't tell the truth to any person. But I not only know her secret, but also know..." "

His voice suddenly stopped, cut off abruptly.

A pair of iron hooks extension came in from the window. His throat was all of a sudden pinched by the hook without saying any other word. The eyes had protruded, the blood from the split open corner of the eyes had flowed down.

Then his entire body collapsed, like a tree that withered. If someone did not see this with his own eyes, he could not absolutely think of how fearful this kind of situation was.

Once he had seen it, he could never forget it.

Bai Yu-jing only felt his own stomach contracting. He could hardly stop

himself from vomiting.

He looked at Fang Longxiang slowly entering the room in the snow white silk clothes. He was removing the blood from the iron hook.

Bai Yu-jing calmly said: "You should not kill him."

Fang Longxiang smiled and said: "Why don't you look at his hands?"

The corpse had collapsed, but both hands actually were grasping something tightly.

Fang Longxiang lightly said, "You thought he was really talking with you. If I had not killed him, I feared you had turned into a honeycomb."

He used the iron hook to break open the hands. The hands laid open, full of secret weapons.

In the hands there were four different shapes of secret weapons.

Fang Longxiang said: "I know your longevity sword is the ultimate adversary of secret weapons. But do you know why I do not feel safe?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Why?"

Fang Longxiang said: "Because I also know this person's secret weapons miss very little."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Who is he?"

Fang Longxiang said: "South of Yangtze River, the secret weapon's first master Gongsun Jing."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Green Dragon Clan's Gongsun Jing?"

Fang Longxiang said: "Right."

Bai Yu-jing sighed and said: "But you should not kill him so quickly."

Fang Longxiang said: "Why?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "I also have many questions to ask him."

Fang Longxiang said: "You may ask me."

He passed inside, casting a judgemental look around. He saw the woman and sighed: "I didn't know that Gongsun Jing not only understood secret weapons, but also he understood very well how to select his woman."

Bai Yu-jing said: "This is his woman?"

Fang Longxiang said: "This is his wife."

Bai Yu-jing said: "This child is his son?"

Fang Longxiang smiled and said: "Child? ... You really think this is a child?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "He is not?"

Fang Longxiang said: "This child's age is at least ten years older than you."

He used his foot to kick this child's face and the dust also fell down from the face.

Unexpectedly, there were wrinkles on this child's face.

Fang Longxiang said: "This person is called the poisonous nail. He had practiced skills since he was born. He is also Gongsun Jing's follower."

Bai Yu-jing could not bear to sigh. He painstakingly said with a smile: "The deceased person is not a deceased person, the child is not a child, the old lady is not an old lady - this is actually very wonderful."

Fang Longxiang lightly said that, "When you encounter this wonderful thing again, you will be a dead person."

Bai Yu-jing said: "The Green Dragon Clan's influence proliferates in the world, why does a Green Dragon Clan's person should act so surreptitiously?"

Fang Longxiang said: "Because the one they tried to avoid, was the Green Dragon Clan."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Why?"

Fang Longxiang said: "Because Gongsun Jing made a disgraceful matter to the Green Dragon Clan."

Bai Yu-jing said: "What matter?"

Fang Longxiang said: "The same item which was very significant, was swindled by someone from him. He certainly knew the Green Dragon Clan's custom."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Therefore he led his wife and his followers to disguise themselves. They play a role here to recover the item?"

Fang Longxiang said: "Right."

Bai Yu-jing said: "How do you know about these matters?"

Fang Longxiang smiled and said: "Have you forgotten who am I?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Such item is really with Yuan Zi Xia?"

Fang Longxiang said: "This you should ask her."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Where is she?"

Fang Longxiang said: "She's outside."

Bai Yu-jing went out immediately, Fang Longxiang allowed him to pass through.

Suddenly, an iron hook cut down on his hand, the longevity sword "ding" fell down.

After that, the iron hook like a hard fist had hit Bai Yu-jing's blood gate under his waist.

The candlelight was undulating, the entire room seemed to keep on undulating.

Bai Yu-jing had not opened his eyes, but he had felt an ice-cold iron hook tickling his throat.

He finally awoke. Perhaps he'd like to never wake up, because he did not really want to see Fang Longxiang's face again.

That extremely outstanding talented face now actually resembled an unspeakable ugliness.

This face was smiling while facing his face. He said: "You could not guess!"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Indeed I could not guess, because I always thought of you as a friend of mine."

He diligently tried to maintain a tranquil face - since he had lost, why should he act childishly?

Fang Longxiang smiled and said: "Who says I am not your friend: I am always your friend."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Now?"

Fang Longxiang said: "Now it would depend on you."

Bai Yu-jing said: "If I am not willing to be obedient?"

Fang Longxiang said: "You can bend a little."

Bai Yu-jing said: "If am not willing to be obedient?"

Fang Longxiang suddenly heaved a long sigh. He looked at the iron hook on his hands and slowly said: "I am a disabled person, a disabled person would have a hard time trying to mix in jianghu. If I do not have a very strong backing to support me, even if I refused stubbornly, I would still not be able to live comfortably."

Bai Yu-jing said that, "Who is supporting you?"

Fang Longxiang said: "You cannot figure it out?"

Bai Yu-jing finally understood that, and said painstakingly with a smile: "So you are also a Green Dragon Clan's member."

Fang Longxiang said, "Green Dragon Clan's altar master."

Bai Yu-jing said: "This place is also one of Green Dragon Clan's altar?"

Fang Longxiang sighed: "I know you could clear up your thought sooner or later. You are always a smart person."

Bai Yu-jing felt like swallowing a bitter pill but could not spit it out.

Fang Longxiang said: "Three years ago, I was also in a similar position. I was lying down on a place, with some people rubbing my throat with the knife."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Therefore you must enter the Green Dragon Clan? You can't avoid it?"

Fang Longxiang said: "That person actually did not have to force me to enter the Green Dragon Clan. He gave me two choices."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Which two choices?"

Fang Longxiang said: "One is to enter the coffin, the other is to enter the Green Dragon Clan."

Bai Yu-jing said: "You certainly chose the later one."

Fang Longxiang smiled and said: "I want many people to similarly choose this way like me."

Bai Yu-jing said: "That's good. Nobody can say you chose wrongly."

Fang Longxiang said: "We are always good friends. I certainly should at least give you two choices!"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Thanks for saying that, you are really a good friend!"

Fang Longxiang said: "The first way is very close, there is a coffin nearby you."

Bai Yu-jing said: "This coffin is too thin, for such a famous person like me, you should at least give me a much more presentable coffin."

Fang Longxiang said: "That actually would not do. I can guarantee that you can lay down, but cannot make the coffin thicker." The iron hook on his hand started to move. While smiling he said: "But in any event, resting on the bed is always more comfortable than resting in the coffin. You may have some woman's time too on the bed."

Bai Yu-jing nodded, said: "That is all true, only when resting on the bed, I don't want any woman."

Fang Longxiang said: "Oh!"

Bai Yu-jing said: "If on the bed rests a naked cow, I would rather rest in the coffin."

Fang Longxiang said: "You certainly cannot think that Yuan girl is a cow."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Indeed she is not, she is a *****."

Fang Longxiang smiled and said: "In your honest opinion, say what she said was right, who would think such an old fox like Gongsun Jing can be swindled by the *****?"

Bai Yu-jing sighed, said: "In my honest opinion, I actually sympathize with him a little."

Fang Longxiang said: "I also sympathize with him."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Therefore you have killed him."

Fang Longxiang sighed: "If I do not kill him, perhaps he would die ten times more miserable."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Oh."

Fang Longxiang said: "The Green Dragon Clan can cope with such a person as him in at least a hundred methods, each kind will let him regret why he had lived in this world."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Actually what disgraceful matter he had committed?"

Fang Longxiang hesitated a little before saying: "Have you heard of 'the peacock feather'?"

Bai Yu-jing's countenance changed. He said: "Peacock village's peacock feather?"

Fang Longxiang said: "You really have heard." .

Bai Yu-jing sighed: "In jianghu, if a person had not heard these two words, he probably has not heard of the longevity sword."

Fang Longxiang said with a smile: "You are very modest."

Bai Yu-jing also smiled and said: "Modesty is one of my excellent moral traits."

Fang Longxiang said: "Oh? Your also have some other excellent moral traits?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "I do not gamble, do not drink, I am not lascivious, I only have one kind of problem."

Fang Longxiang said: "What problem?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "I told a lie. Only once every day."

Fang Longxiang said: "Today you had not said one? "

Bai Yu-jing said: "No, therefore I must quickly say one now, so as to avoid missing out later."

He smiled and then said: "Therefore if I say anything now, you should better not believe it."

Fang Longxiang said with a smile: "Many thanks you remind me, I certainly won't believe you."

Bai Yu-jing said: "If I said that Gongsun Jing who had just been killed by you had come alive again, you certainly would not believe me."

END OF CHAPTER 4

Chapter 5: A good bright knife - TRANSLATED BY FASTCLOCK

Fang Longxiang said: "Certainly!"

Bai Yu-jing smiled and said: "If I said his wife had come to and were preparing to plot against you, would you believe me?"

Fang Longxiang said: "I will not believe it."

Although in his mouth he said he did not believe it, he could not help turning his head. His hands also moved, the iron hook moved away from Bai Yu-jing's throat.

Behind him, Bai Yu-jing suddenly made an effort to turn to his left and got up.

The longevity sword fell nearby Gongsun Jing's corpse.

As soon as he turned around, his hand had gripped the sword handle.

But at this moment, his newfound strength, suddenly inexplicably vanished.

He just leapt away three feet, but little by little had fallen down.

Then he heard Fang Longxiang's self-satisfied laughter. His heart had sunk.

Because he knew that this was his last opportunity. Now that the opportunity was gone, it would never come again.

Cold and humid.

Bai Yu-jing bent down on the floor, the whole body seemed not willing to move again. But the iron hook had lifted his waist, and turned his body around.

Fang Longxiang was looking at him while smiling. Smiling like a cat looking at his fingernail at the mouse. When the cat caught a mouse, it usually give the mouse 12 opportunities to run away, because it knew that this mouse certainly could not run away.

Bai Yu-jing sighed, said: "I could not think your accupoint hole technique had progressed a lot, we might encourage this by celebrating."

Fang Longxiang said: "Actually while you deceived me so I turn head, I was giving you a chance to try."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Oh."

Fang Longxiang said: "You thought you had really deceived me a moment ago."

Bai Yu-jing said: "If it's me instead of you, I would not be able to stop myself from looking."

Fang Longxiang said: "But I actually do not need to."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Oh."

Fang Longxiang smiled happily, said: "Because I know that Gongsun Jing's wife had died."

Bai Yu-jing said: "You... ... You have already killed her a moment ago."

Fang Longxiang said: "I do not like letting a live person behind me, therefore although I lack a woman presently, I have to sacrifice her reluctantly."

Bai Yu-jing sighed: "I remembered you as a very affectionate person before."

Fang Longxiang revealed strong hatred on his face and coldly said: "Before, I

also am a person with two hands."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Because you no longer have hands, you no longer trust any woman?"

Fang Longxiang said: "I only trusts one kind, a dead one."

Suddenly he revealed a happy smile on his face, saying: "So now we may continue our discussion?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "What discussion? The peacock feather?"

Fang Longxiang nodded and said: "It is said that there are 360 different kinds of secret weapons in the world, but the peacock feather is without a doubt the most successful, the most fearful kind."

Bai Yu-jing said: "I acknowledge that."

This point could hardly be disputed by anyone.

It was said when this kind of secret weapon was sent out, it looked beautiful like a peacock spreading its tail. Not only it was beautiful, it was also magnificent and bright. There was certainly nothing in the world that could compare with it.

But when it moved, this thing would confused you, and claimed your life immediately.

Fang Longxiang said: "What is the most fearful is, besides the peacock village's direct descendants, there was no one in the world who know the secret of this secret weapon. No one knows how it strikes you."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Indeed no one knows."

Fang Longxiang said: "But presently someone has the secret."

With a glint in his eyes he said: "Gongsun Jing's secret map which was swindled from him is the map of peacock feather scheme, with how to use the peacock feather."

Bai Yu-jing's countenance changed immediately. He said: "How can this map fall in his hand?"

Fang Longxiang smiled and said: "If the Green Dragon Clan wants to obtain something, they usually have many methods."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Is it stolen from the peacock village?"

Fang Longxiang said: "Perhaps."

He did not let Bai Yu-jing ask again about it. He continued saying: "Because Peacock village has such as weapon, thy have ruled jiang-hu for dozens of years. Nobody dared to cross with them, even the Green Dragon Clan are not willing to make this kind of trouble."

Bai Yu-jing said: "I know the Green Dragon Clan has always been very unsatisfied with the peacock village."

Fang Longxiang said: "But if others can also make the peacock feather, the power and prestige of peacock village would diminish significantly. These years, they had made many enemies."

Bai Yu-jing pondered this information. He said: "The white horse, red hair, the sharp knife, million gold hall, these all have very big feud with them."

Fang Longxiang said: "Therefore they do not hesitate to lose everything, and had rushed to purchase this secret map. At the least, if they can make the peacock feather successfully, they can have their revenge immediately. Moreover they also very quickly gained a name for themselves."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Right. It is critical for some people in jiang-hu to buy the peacock feather no matter how high the price is."

Fang Longxiang said with a smile: "Perhaps more than the people who want to buy your longevity sword."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Why can't the Green Dragon Clan make this peacock feather on their own? Why do they have to sell to the others?"

Fang Longxiang said: "Because the Green Dragon's eldest child is only interested in one thing."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Gold."

Fang Longxiang said: "The silver jewelry is also good."

He smiled very much mysteriously and said, "The Green Dragon Clan can obtain this thing, has certainly spend big amount of money. The Green Dragon Clan's expenditure is frightfully big, therefore the Green Dragon was anxious to let this thing go at the right price."

Bai Yu-jing had also smiled and said: "Moreover this thing is a very hot item, the sooner you fling it away, the sooner the trouble fall upon the others."

Fang Longxiang said: "That's true."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Also, there are many people in jiang-hu who has died under the peacock feather. If you kill him with the peacock feather, his family member

would also unavoidably want to take revenge against the peacock feather."

Fang Longxiang revealed his appreciation of the analysis and said: "That would certainly be unavoidable."

Bai Yu-jing said: "This kind of matter will produce more chaos in jiang-hu. When jiang-hu become more chaotic, the Green Dragon Clan can fish in the troubled waters for more opportunity."

He sighed and said: "Your Green Dragon's eldest child is a real talent. All people have no alternative but to admire him including me."

Fang Longxiang laughed and said: "I could not guess you unexpectedly have this knowledge already, I also admire you."

Bai Yu-jing lightly said that, " If I have this kind of thing in my hand, at least I won't be swindled by anyone."

Fang Longxiang said: "Gongsun Jing was a quick-witted person. He had experience managing this. Also he was the top person in the Green Dragon Clan, so it was a pity he also had the same problem as yours."

Bai Yu-jing said: "He also told lies?"

Fang Longxiang smiled and said: "He was lascivious, even more lascivious than you. He was also unfortunately like you, he had a liking for that Yuan girl."

He sighed, said: "She is really the woman who understands how to deceive men. The man who meets her, if he does not hang himself, he probably jumps into the river."

Bai Yu-jing's face showed a painful recollection. He was actually smiling when he said: "Luckily I have not hung myself, nor jumped into the river, because I

have a good friend to look after me."

Fang Longxiang did not blush. He kept smiling and said: "Therefore I always say that your luck is good."

He continued by saying, "Actually how that Yuan girl could steal this thing, until now I am also not that clear. My suspicion is that she had made Gongsun Jing extremely tired at one time, made a mold with his key, then had it made into a key. Then she bribed the person who guarded the tunnel to steal it."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Your guess is very reasonable."

Fang Longxiang said: "After she had calculated everything accurately, Gongsun Jing surely could trace her. But he had been swindled right under his nose. He himself could not escape from the crime, certainly he could not reveal this matter to anyone."

He sighed and said: "This Yuan girl has indeed considered everything. It is a pity she had forgotten one matter."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Oh!"

Fang Longxiang said: "She had forgotten that the Green Dragon could make any person speak, as long as the person is not dead."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Did that guard say her whereabouts?"

Fang Longxiang nodded, said: "She had bribed two guards. While changing the shift, she dove into the secret vault with the duplicated key, stole the peacock map, and then slipped away then they changed the shift again."

Bai Yu-jing lightly said that, "Why then she didn't kill these two guards to eliminate a potential informant?"

Fang Longxiang said: "Because she feared to alarm the others, because her wugong was not very skillful, and because she didn't have enough spare time."

He smiled and said: "Therefore if you think her heart is not sufficiently ruthless, you are mistaken."

Bai Yu-jing said: "I looked at a person, and frequently guessed wrong. How otherwise did I expect you to be such a good friend?"

Fang Longxiang also ignored him and said: "The Green Dragon has informers everywhere in the world. Since they know about her, they would certainly be able to find out her whereabouts."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Certainly."

Fang Longxiang said: "Gongsun Jing certainly did not resign to his fate. He wanted to recover this thing. But he was also very clear on the Green Dragon's method of handling rebels."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Therefore only then he disguised himself as a deceased person, and hid in the coffin."

Fang Longxiang sneeringly said: "He thought this method was extremely wise and extremely safe. But he never could suspect that when he bought the coffin, the store also belonged to the Green Dragon Clan."

Bai Yu-jing sighed, said: "The Green Dragon Clan looked after their own very thoroughly. As soon as you enter the Green Dragon Clan, they have already

prepared the things to do after your death."

Fang Longxiang lightly said that, "That way of dying is at least better than being thrown as the dog food."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Those two monks? They have become dog food?"

Fang Longxiang said: "Those two were certainly also his parties. They temporarily played the role of the monks to get here."

Bai Yu-jing said: "It is a pity their heads are too light, the clothes are too new, moreover their eyes like to look at young girls."

Fang Longxiang said: "Because their disguise could be seen, therefore the poisonous needle was employed to eliminate a potential informant, but also to shift the blame on Miao Shaotian."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Who was the person that ransacked the boxes? It's not you?"

Fang Longxiang said with a smile: "Why would I do such thing. If the others uncover the thing, I would know that too, right?"

Bai Yu-jing nodded and said: "If it was not you, then it must be Zhang San or Zhao Yi-dao. At that time only they had such opportunity."

Fang Longxiang said: "It was a pity you send those good vegetables and liquor."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Although Gongsun Jing was mad to risk it, but he also feared a long delay would mean more problems. Therefore when we were all in the building, he was anxiously looking for Yuan Zi Xia."

Fang Longxiang said with a smile: "I think when he came up, he originally wanted to discuss only with Yuan Zi Xia. Who knew this young lady was unexpectedly stubborn, probably because she knew as soon as she cried out, you could play hero and rescue the beautiful woman."

Bai Yu-jing painstakingly said with a smile: "The funniest thing is I unexpectedly handed her over to you, because I misguidedly wanted you to protect her."

Fang Longxiang said: "Responding to a request of the person is a matter of loyalty. I can certainly protect her very well."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Now your great work finally accomplished, what else do you want?"

Fang Longxiang said: "The great merit had not been brought to a successful conclusion, but almost."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Which one?"

Fang Longxiang said: "The peacock map is still with another."

Bai Yu-jing said: "In whose hand?"

Fang Longxiang said: "You."

Bai Yu-jing said: "In my hand?"

Fang Longxiang sunk his face and said: "You do not acknowledge?"

Bai Yu-jing sighed said: "Woman... Oh, she obviously asked me to die before telling this secret, who knows she has revealed it first instead."

Fang Longxiang revealed a self-satisfied smile on his face. He said: "I have already told you, the Green Dragon clan could force anyone to speak, even the dead people, even less a woman?"

Bai Yu-jing sighed: "If you want a woman to keep a secret, it is probably comparable to wanting a dead person to open his mouth."

Fang Longxiang easily said, "I am telling you, you have two ways to choose, the second way would guarantee more happiness than the first way."

Bai Yu-jing said: "What is the second way?"

Fang Longxiang said: "Bring your peacock map to the Green Dragon Clan, and you will be given Gongsun Jing's Sub-leader position."

Bai Yu-jing suddenly smiled.

Fang Longxiang said: "Why do you smile?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "I am laughing at myself."

Fang Longxiang said: "Laughing at you? Why?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Because I almost believe your speech."

Fang Longxiang said: "You do not believe it?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Actually you have obviously known that I have the peacock map. Since you have the method to force me to open my mouth, why do you say all this pleasant speech to deceive me into a happy feeling?"

Fang Longxiang said: "Because you are a talented person, the Green Dragon clan needs all kind of talented people."

Bai Yu-jing hesitated and said: "But I do not believe it."

Fang Longxiang said: "How can you believe it then?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "You first free me, then I will hand over the peacock map. I will not deceive you..."

Fang Longxiang had smiled. He said: "Luckily a moment ago you have reminded me. Otherwise I nearly believe your speech."

Bai Yu-jing sighed: "I know we cannot discuss this transaction successfully. But I also have a matter to tell you."

Fang Longxiang said: "Just say it."

Bai Yu-jing said: "If I do not want to speak, there is nobody in the world who can force me to open my mouth. If I don't say where the peacock map is, there is nobocy in the world who can find it."

Fang Longxiang's eyes flashed. He smiled and said: "This night, you simply have not been to other place. If I search every detail of this place, why couldn't I find it?"

Fang Longxiang sank his face and said: "If I must look, I would naturally start from your body."

Bai Yu-jing said: "You are very welcome to it."

Fang Longxiang stared at him, his eyes were like a fox hunting for the dog.

Bai Yu-jing's eyes actually were looking around, avoiding contact with his eyes. It was as if he feared that his eyes would betray his secret.

In the room there are many things.

He looked at everything, at the pictures hanging on the wall, at the white candles on the table, at the coffin, and at the dead person in the coffin.

He had not looked at his own sword.

He had not included that in his looking around.

Fang Longxiang's eyes suddenly shone. He suddenly said: "If I were you, in what place can I put that peacock map in?"

Bai Yu-jing: "You are not me."

Fang Longxiang said with a smile: "That's good, I am not you. But I also do not have your longevity sword."

Bai Yu-jing's complexion had changed as if all blood had drained from his face.

Fang Longxiang was laughing. Gently and swiftly, "ding", he had raised the longevity sword with his iron hook.

The sword light is bright like silver, the sword handle was entwined with the purplish black satin.

Fang Longxiang was lightly caressing the sword spine, while peeking at Bai Yu-jing with the corner of his eyes. He muttered: "Good sword. It is really a good sword, but it's only a pity that the sword handle made it look bad."

Bai Yu-jing reluctantly said with a smile: "Later when I have the opportunity, I

will certainly change it."

Fang Longxiang suddenly said with a smile: "Fine, I will change it for you."

Bai Yu-jing smiled reluctantly, said: "You do not need to take the trouble. I have to decline your good intention with thank you."

Fang Longxiang said: "Since everybody is a good friend, why are you so polite."

He slowly reversed the sword, and swayed it. He used his two fingers to knock and listened to the sound. He said: "Well, how come the inside seems to be empty?"

He used the tongue to lick his dry lip. It tasted liked the salty fish.

Fang Longxiang slowly nodded, said: "Mmm, it is not really empty, but it seems there is a rolled paper inside."

Bai Yu-jing gave a long sigh and closed his eyes.

Fang Longxiang laughed. He patted the sword handle and gave it a turn with three fingers – the sword handle was really empty as it opened with the turn.

Only the secret inside the sword handle was not a rolled paper, but a loose needle.

Niu Mangpan poisonous needle.

With a "zip" sound, several dozens Niu Mangpan poisonous needle already hit Fang Longxiang in his face, in his eyes. He covered his face with his hands and crazily roared loudly. He threw himself to Bai Yu-jing, as if he wanted to go out

with Bai Yu-jing.

But as soon as he fell, he could not move anymore.

The iron hook in his hand iron had penetrated his own face and completely messed up his profile.

It was cold and humid. But there was a sliver of light seeping through the window.

The endless night had finally passed.

Bai Yu-jing lay down in the room, where he could feel Fang Longxiang's blood from his face.

The blood had soaked his upper and lower garments. There was an unspeakable grief in his heart.

This person had always been his friend. If he had any other choice, he would not have done what was done. But he knew that there was no other choice. Even if he submitted the peacock map, Xiao Fang would definitely not let him go. Moreover, he basically had never seen this preposterous peacock map.

Xiao Fang certainly would not let him go, because they were once friends.

If you had betrayed your friend, you could not let him go later because you would not have the face to say goodbye to him.

The windows and doors were all still shut, the rooster crowed incessantly from far away, the sunlight gradually came through the window.

Outside the gate, there were suddenly sounds of footsteps of many people.

Bai Yu-jing was sighing in his heart: "Finally they have come."

He knew that the bellow of Xiao Fang a moment ago surely would bring all people to this place.

"Shop owner, where are you at?"

"What's the matter?"

"Are you sure that was boss Fang's sound a moment ago?"

"I cannot be wrong."

"But that room is actually where that old lady lives."

"I already suspect that that old lady has a little secretive appearance."

Young Master Zhu, Miao Shaotian, Zhao Yi-dao, the white horse Zhang San and the three people from Green Dragon Clan had already come.

Bai Yu-jing could only hope that they stood outside discussing for some time, so his accupoint would be have been released by that time.

But by now the window had already sent in some light. By using a crack torn by the iron hook a moment ago, a person's eye was observing – like a flame burning eye.

The white horse Zhang San: "What person do you see?"

Miao Shaotian said: "Dead people, a room full of dead people."

He had just spoken that when the door had been knocked down. The three people from Green Dragon Clan had rushed in. But they only looked at the scene quickly before drawing back.

The situation in this room was really too pitiful, too fearful.

After waiting for a while, Zhao Yi-dao and the white horse Zhang San slowly walked inside.

At the same time two people lightly gave a shout.

The White horse Zhang San: "They are really dead."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "How can the shop owner say this is an old... ..." He discovered that the old lady was not old, he certainly could not continue.

The white horse Zhang San said: "Who is this person also? Gongsun Jing? How can it be Gongsun Jing?"

Suddenly Young Master Zhu sneeringly said: "Nobody has seen that there is a live person here."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Who?"

Young Master Zhu said that, "Certainly a stubborn person that had feigned that position."

Indeed Bai Yu-jing originally intended to feign death temporarily, but Young Master Zhu actually walked to him. He squatted down and looked at him. He brought out his smile and said: "Bai-zi is resting?" That man in black was still

like an inseparable shadow behind him.

The white horse Zhang San let out his voice: "Bai Yu-jing is also here! He has not really died."

Young Master Zhu easily said, "You forget that Bai-zi is immortal."

The white horse Zhang San used the corner of his eye to cast a glance at Zhao Yi-dao. He coldly said: "Actually I do not know whether his headache hurts him?"

Zhao Yi-dao said: "I think it is sore. Let me fix it."

Bai Yu-jing had just opened his eye. He saw a steel knife as bright as snow chopping down to his throat.

A good bright knife!

END OF CHAPTER 5

**Chapter 6: The shadow of Wei Tian-ying - TRANSLATED BY
FASTCLOCK**

Chapter 6 Part 1

A good bright knife!

The ice-cold steel knife progressed quickly to Bai Yu-jing's throat. He suddenly could only looked at it without blinking.

This knife had not chopped the throat. The steel knife arrived on the throat and suddenly stopped.

Zhao Yi-dao stared at him. He suddenly said with a smile: "Bai-zi knows when this knife chops on the neck, it will fall?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "I know."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "But you do not fear it."

Bai Yu-jing said: "I know this knife will not chop me."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Oh?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Because there is something hanging on my neck."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "What thing?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "The Peacock map?"

Zhao Yi-dao changed his countenance and said: "You know about the peacock map?"

The white horse Zhang San cut in and said: "Do you know where the peacock

map is?"

Bai Yu-jing actually shut his mouth.

Zhao Yi-dao sank his face and said: "Why don't you open your mouth?"

Young Master Zhu lightly said, "If there is a knife on my neck, I would also not able to say anything."

Zhao Yi-dao laughed and with a "stroke" the knife already entered the sheath.

Young Master Zhu had squatted down again and smilingly said: "We complied with Bai-zi's request a moment ago. Now you can equally keep your promise. As long as Bai-zi help us to find the peacock map, we will let Bai-zi go immediately – you may even bring priceless gold jewelry to enjoy your whole life."

Bai Yu-jing smiled and said: "The Million Gold Hall master really speaks according to the principle."

Young Master Zhu said that, "I am a businessman. I certainly understand how to make a fair transaction or how to discuss it!"

Bai Yu-jing said: "We certainly can discuss this transaction."

Young Master Zhu said that, "I can see already that Bai-zi is a sensible person."

Bai Yu-jing said: "The peacock map is certainly in that Yuan girl's hand. As long as you release my accupoint, I will lead you to find her."

As soon as Bai Yu-jing said these words, he had already regretted it in his heart.

He should not have let the others know that his accupoint had been pressed.

Now, the others could see that themselves. If someone were too anxious to conclude a matter, things could go unavoidably wrong.

Who knew that Young Master Zhu actually comply very quickly and immediately say, "Good."

Once he said the word “good”, he had patted on him – not on Bai Yu-jing's pressed accupoint, but instead on the accupoint on his knee joint.

Bai Yu-jing's heart was bitter, although he maintained his composure on his face. He lightly said: "Is it possible that you don't want the peacock map?"

Young Master Zhu showed a faint smile and said: "I certainly want it. But I do not dare to make Bai-zi's honorable self exhausted."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Young Master Zhu is too polite."

Young Master Zhu said that, "So long as Bai-zi say where that Yuan girl, so long as we can find her, we can come back immediately to let Bai-zi go. Such way, we would not want to exhaust Bai-zi's honorable self?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Good, this method is extremely good."

Zhao Yi-dao could not bear to interrupt and say: "You have thought about it, why don't you say it?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "It is only a pity that although I know where she is, I actually cannot say it."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Why not?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "I forgot the name of the place."

Young Master Zhu sighed and said: "Fellows, can someone make Bai-zi remember that name?"

Miao Shaotian coldly said: "I."

He suddenly passed through, the hand had dipped into the hemp cloth sack around his waist. There was an impressively striped poisonous snake in his hand.

A ringed grass snake.

Zhao Yi-dao could not help but stepped back by two steps.

Miao Shaotian sneeringly said: "Most snake meat is nutritious, if Bai-zi swallows down this snake, your memory could change for the better."

His hand suddenly stretched out to Bai Yu-jing, the snake's red tongue had nearly glued on Bai Yu-jing's nose.

Bai Yu-jing sensed his muscles on the face gradually grow stiffer, the cold sweat gradually wetted his palms.

Suddenly, there was an extremely enchanting sound in the courtyard. It brought a smile, while saying: "Is everybody looking for me?"

Chapter 6 Part 2

The early morning fog just rose up, whirling like a wind around in the courtyard. It formed a beautiful misty veil arrangement with the wisteria flowers above.

Yuan Zi Xia stood under the wisteria flowers, stood still in the fine mist of the dense fog. She held a candle in her hand.

She looked even more beautiful, kind of mystical with soft beauty, that it seemed like the wisteria flowers nearby lost their colors.

Miao Shaotian and the white horse Zhang San had wanted to rush to her.

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Stop!"

She suddenly raised another hand and said: "If you two really come, I will burn this thing."

The candlelight flashed in her crystal clear delicate hands that looked like jade. She lifted up high a volume of paper, holding it away from the candlelight only by a half foot.

Miao Shaotian and the white horse Zhang San stopped immediately, their eyes could not restrain from revealing the greediness.

The white horse Zhang San reluctantly smiled and said: "Miss should know that that item is worth a pile of gold. You certainly would not give it up by burning it."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I certainly know that. But if I die, what is the use of a pile

of gold?

Miao Shaotian and the white horse Zhang San looked at each other and slowly drew back.

Young Master Zhu actually walked forward, gave a deep bow and said: "Miss' fragrant trace suddenly had disappeared causing a lot of worry. Unexpectedly, Miss had flown fast and come here."

Yuan Zi Xia charmingly said: "It is kind that master care about it."

Young Master Zhu said that, "Thanks for the compliment."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I have heard that Young Master Zhu is not only a young millionaire, moreover gentle and courteous. Today, I can see for myself that the name is not empty."

Young Master Zhu said that, "I also have heard that Miss is such a fairy maiden, a beautiful woman. Today I can see the reason and see it, I am most honored."

Miao Shaotian cannot bear to sneer and sayd: "Here is not the Million Gold Hall's living room, where comes so much idle talk!"

Yuan Zi Xia said with a smile: "Miao Dongzhu do not understand, what a woman like to listen the most is flattery. If each of you wants to win my favor, you should say some more idle talk."

Miao Shaotian stares said: "Why do I want to win your favor?"

Yuan Zi Xia easily said that, "Because if I favor you, perhaps I can give you this thing."

Young Master Zhu suddenly big voice: "That's not good, not good. This thing does not come to Miss easily, how can you give it to us so casually."

Yuan Zi Xia smiled sweetly and said: "I thought so originally, but presently my idea is actually different."

Young Master Zhu said that, "Oh?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I am only a woman who is alone and forsaken. If I have this thing with me, sooner or later one day, I will unavoidably die in the other people's hand."

Young Master Zhu sighed, appearing to have an infinite sympathy, and said: "In jiang-hu every step by step can be a dangerous narrow path, Miss would really need to be very careful."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "But if I have delivered this thing, then wouldn't nobody come to look for me?"

Young Master Zhu reluctantly concealed his happiness on his face and said: "This makes a great sense. But if Miss wants to give out this thing, it will need to be at the right price as well."

Yuan Zi Xia winked her eyes and focused. She said: "Then, the way Young Master Zhu say, how much should I receive?"

Young Master Zhu colored: "At least enough for a girl to enjoy a life-long endless wealth. Moreover, it has to be gold and jewelry, not any other."

Yuan Zi Xia sighed and said: "I have also thought so, but... such great wealth, who would be willing to give to me?"

Miao Shaotian cannot bear to say loudly: "As long as you give the permission, each people here is willing to give to you."

Yuan Zi Xia in great happiness: "That is too good, only... "

Miao Shaotian snatched asking: "Only how?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Inside there is also a friend of mine, can you let me have a look him?"

Suddenly nobody spoke, nobody was willing to take the responsibility.

Yuan Zi Xia sighed: "My hand is tired of lifting, if one is not careful, and burn this thing, what would happen? Even it burns a bit, that would be troublesome."

In her hand, the volume of paper seemed to be nearer and nearer to the candlelight.

Young Master Zhu smiled suddenly and said: "Since Bai-zi is Miss' friend, Miss must be worried about him. This is perfectly understandable. Miss, please come."

Yuan Zi Xia made an effort to shake her head, said: "That is not good, I do not dare."

Young Master Zhu said that, "Why?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "There too many of you big men that stand in there. I am too afraid."

Young Master Zhu said that, "Miss wants us to go?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "If you can draw back to the side corridor, only then I dare."

Young Master Zhu said that, "Then?"

Yuan Zi Xia pursed her lips and say with a smile: "There are so many people outside, can I make out anything with him? I only want to say two words, and then I will come out and give this thing. While everybody has this opportunity, you can discuss first who will take this thing."

Young Master Zhu looked at Zhao Yi-dao, Zhao Yi-dao looked at the white horse Zhang San.

The white horse Zhang San suddenly said that, "I will ask him first to see whether he is willing to see you."

He did not wait for the others to response, and had fled into the room like a flash. He had pressed five Bai Yu-jing's accupoints, and then turned around to shove open the window.

Although the accupoints were the same, but each person's technique to press them were not necessarily the same. If someone's accupoints had been pressed by three different techniques, even if someone else wanted to release them, it would have been very difficult.

If they found out that Yuan Zi Xia had planned to release his accupoints, it would be possible to act with enough time.

Young Master Zhu showed a faint smile and said: "Bai-zi certainly thinks highly of Miss, why would I limit that?"

Bai Yu-jing lay down on the place, looking at Yuan Zi Xia as she entered. He actually seemed to be looking at a stranger, there was no expression on his face.

Yuan Zi Xia was also staring at him with a very complicated look on her face,

whether it was with ill or sadness.

Bai Yu-jing coldly said: "What are you doing?"

Yuan Zi Xia was mournful while smiling. She said: "You... ... You really do not know what I am doing?"

Bai Yu-jing sneeringly said: "You certainly come to rescue me, because you are good. You have the same good intention as Fang Longxiang, you are all friends of mine."

Yuan Zi Xia hung her head and said: "I may just sneak off quietly. If I do not care about you, why should I come?"

Her eyes were red, the tears had slowly dropped.

Suddenly a Green Dragon Clan person outside said loudly: "This thing is originally with the Green Dragon Clan, naturally it should be given to the Green Dragon Clan. Young Master Zhu and Zhao Bangzhu had agreed to it a moment ago."

Although Yuan Zi Xia's eyes had some tears filling her eyes, but the corners of her mouth had actually revealed a happy expression

The wind had blown stronger. Miao Shaotian's big golden links on the ear made dingdong noises, the two eyes burning like flame that aimed at the three people from the Green Dragon Clan.

Zhao Yi-dao was lying on the parapet, as if indifferent to this matter. But he never stopped taking a look.

The white horse Zhang San tapped the pillar with his fingers. He couldn't bear this kind of silence, and intentionally was making any sound.

The man in black was motionless shadowing Young Master Zhu's behind. His face did not have any expression. This matter was actually irrelevant to him. All he cared about was that there were eight people in the family waiting for him to get the money to eat.

The Green Dragon Clan people were gripping tightly their fists, before one of them suddenly said: "Young Master Zhu said the words. You usually had the most credit, this time you could not go back on your word to renege on a promise."

Young Master Zhu had finally smiled and said: "I certainly cannot, certainly cannot, only... ..."

"Only how?"

This person's stature was big and tall, with a full brazen beard. At a glance, it could be seen that he was a very temperamental person.

Young Master Zhu said that, "Although I complied with you, but others... "

The dragon beard guy snatched in by saying immediately: "Young Master Zhu has the most effective and influential word. Even if only Young Master Zhu who has complied, brothers and I will feel relieved."

Young Master Zhu had smiled and said: "As long as I comply with you, you three could really feel relieved?"

The dragon beard guy said that, "Precisely!"

Young Master Zhu sighed and said: "Good, I promise you."

The dragon beard guy became happier. His face cleared and he said, "Regarding this matter, the Green Dragon Clan would not forget Young Master Zhu ... "

Suddenly "zip", his voice suddenly got cut off.

After that there were some miserably calls.

The miserable call was shouted by the others, because a golden link had suddenly penetrated his throat.

He had not seen the blood, yet he did not have to shout again because he was covering his face.

And then, the blood slowly flowed out to his neck...

He stood on the left side, while the miserable call actually was given by the person on the right side.

As soon as Miao Shaotian acted, the white horse Zhang San also acted suddenly. He launched his palm, hitting the bridge of his nose.

The blood splashed everywhere. He was miserably shouting and covering his face, when the white horse Zhang San knees hit him. He collapsed down like the mud. The body had curled up, the tears and the nasal mucus flowed out together along with the blood. Then there was a sudden convulsion and he no longer moved.

The middle person was originally filled with joy, because if they could return the peacock map, that would no doubt be a great merit. The Green Dragon Clan always gave excellent reward to enjoy according to the person's merit without any hesitation. While his heart was fantasizing what was coming to him: the gold, the beautiful woman and the glory, suddenly his two partners next to him

all dropped dead.

Zhao Yi-dao stood opposite him, and coldly looked at him.

He felt his stomach contracting. Fear gripped him like an invisible hand, contorting and convoluting his stomach. He almost vomited before saying: "Zhao... Zhao Bangzhu (Leader Zhao), I thought you already agreed a moment ago... "

Zhao Yi-dao coldly said: "A moment ago no one knew whether the peacock map could be gotten or not, also nobody really had seen the peacock map, but now ... "

He looked at the opening on the window with a smile and said: "Now that the peacock map is essentially in our hand, why do we have to give it to the Green Dragon Clan?"

This person said: "The Green Dragon Clan always give distinction between gratitude and grudges, today Zhao Bangzhu has killed us, don't you worry about the retaliation from the rest of the Green Dragon Clan?"

Zhao Yi-dao lightly said that, "You obviously were killed by Gongsun Jing, why would the Green Dragon Clan have to retaliate?"

This person had finally understood. The Green Dragon Clan also often shifted blame to the others.

His whole body trembled. Clenching his teeth he said: "A Green Dragon Clan person is ready to sacrifice himself with a shining death. Zhao Bangzhu will not necessarily get the peacock map. Also, the Green Dragon Clan's Wei Tian-ying will come immediately... "

Speaking of the three words in "Wei Tian-ying", he suddenly had the courage to say loudly: "Now perhaps he had already arrived. Although we three people died in your hand, you three people also should give up any idea of living."

Hearing the three words in "Wei Tian-ying", the faces of Miao Shaotian, Zhao Yi-dao, the white horse Zhang San really changed. They could not help looking toward the front door outside simultaneously.

The lantern at the gate lantern had been extinguished. There was no sound of people, nor any shadow of anyone.

Zhao Yi-dao sneeringly said: "No matter whether we die or live, you have to go first."

The white horse Zhang San: "Now his head is certainly very painful."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "I will take care of it for him." The reflection of the knife flashed, the steel knife immediately left its sheath, the knife had chopped toward this person's neck.

Zhao Yi-dao was known as "a knife", it was hard to imagine how quickly and fiercely this knife forced downward.

This person's hand had gripped his knife's hilt, but he could not draw out the knife. He had to stand up to try to fend himself.

Who knew Zhao Yi-dao's style unexpectedly changed in this flash, a horizontal knife, was stabbing on his chest instead.

The blood splashed everywhere.

This person miserably shouted in a hissing voice: "Wei Tian-ying, Wei Tangzhu, you certainly ... must revenge us!"

The accusing call was suddenly cut off, as he was surrounded by a pool of blood.

Quiet, and more quiet.

Although nobody had seen Wei Tian-ying, he had already grown monstrous, a mystical, and a fearful shadow in their minds.

Zhao Yi-dao dried the blood on the knife with the bottom of his boots. Miao Shaotian had also taken back the golden link from that person's throat.

The white horse Zhang San lightly caressed his own fists, while both of his eyebrows were knitted very tightly.

Young Master Zhu suddenly gave a long sigh and said: "These three people have finally felt relieved, but whose turn is next?"

The color of white horse Zhang San's face changed, staring at Miao Shaotian.

Miao Shaotian sneeringly said: "Young Zhang San, you can rest assured that the next one is not me."

Zhao Yi-dao suddenly coughed loudly and said: "Good. I want to let you know that, the sharp knife clan and the red hair clan have already tied our hands like brothers. From now on, Leader Miao's matter, is also my matter.

Miao Shaotian laughed loudly and said: "When cooking the eggplants, the first one to select will get the softest. Do you understand these words?"

Zhao Yi-dao said: "I understand."

Miao Shaotian said with a smile: "I fear among the three of you, the next person will always be you. The younger one has more spiciness to it."

The white horse Zhang San's face fell like the dying embers. He said: "Good. I do not necessarily fear you."

Miao Shaotian: "You try then."

The golden link showed up in his hand as he readied himself.

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Miao Bangzhu should feel better that I will be behind you."

Miao Shaotian ferociously said with a smile: "Young Zhang San, go ahead."

The white horse Zhang San roared, suddenly assaulted with his fists three times. Unexpectedly he already went all out in his fighting method.

Miao Shaotian was ninety percent sure that he had the victory in his hand. He certainly could not go all out with him, because he would his face. He retreated by three steps, and laughed: "Even if you go all out, it would still be useless... "

The laughter suddenly became a roaring pitiful yell.

Zhao Yi-dao's knife had penetrated his back. The knife's point penetrated into the bone producing a loud crunch sound.

Miao Shaotian's body propelled forward as if he threw himself forward, when the white horse Zhang San's iron fists attacked his face fiercely.

A bone-crunching sound.

Miao Shaotian fell on the parapet, the hand that hold the golden "zip" into the parapet.

His body was supported by the golden link so not to fall down completely. However the bleeding face was distorted with protruded eyes burning with flame, filled with alarm, fear and anger. In a dampened voice: "Zhao Yi-dao, you... ... you cur, I die but I won't forgive you!"

Zhao Yi-dao was scraping the blood on the knife with the bottom of the boots. He heaved a deep sigh and said: "This won't help the matter. The sharp knife clan and the white horse clan are already tied like brothers. Why can't you see that?"

The white horse Zhang San laughed loudly and said: "The others form an alliance by drinking the blood, we actually drink the plaster powder."

Miao Shaotian clenched his teeth, both hands entered the gunnysack on his waist.

Zhao Yi-dao and the white horse Zhang San actually could not help retreating by three steps. Shoulder to shoulder they stood there, staring at his hands.

Although Miao Shaotian's condition was not good now, but the Red Hair Clan originally owned the five poisonous things which everyone feared...

Who knew when he just put his hand in, his body suddenly leaped up. With a "thud", he hit the porch before slowly dropping down, unable to move.

His hand had stretched out to show a bleeding poisonous snake bite on the back of his hand. It turned out the snake also appreciated the delicacy of Miao Shaotian's blood, just like Miao Shaotian appreciated the delicacy of the snake

blood.

Young Master Zhu gave a long sigh. He argued: "When the master bleeds, the poisonous snake makes an unpredictable move... A snake is a snake, if someone thinks he can befriend it like a person, he just wants to have bad luck."

The white horse Zhang San coldly said: "This person does not necessarily talk about friendship."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "That's right."

These two words were aimed at Young Master Zhu.

Young Master Zhu looked up and said: "Although Miao Shaotian has died, do not forget the ‘nine of the Red Hair Clan’ are also difficult."

Zhao Yi-dao sneeringly said: "Although the ‘nine of the Red Hair Clan’ are difficult, they are inferior to him, you don't need to worry for us."

His hand had gripped the hilt. With flashing eyes at Young Master Zhu, suddenly a timely fist from him hit the white horse Zhang San's ribs: it hit truly heavily.

The white horse Zhang San did not expect the hit at all and fell to the parapet with a “thud” sound.

He had not turned around, but Zhao Yi-dao had drawn his knife!

A good quick knife.

The blood splashed, his blood was fresher. Miao Shaotian's snake on the back

of his hands had smelled the blood and suddenly slid towards his wound.

Zhao Yi-dao wiped both sides of the knife on the bottom of his boots. He sneeringly said: "You had said, this person does not talk about friendship. If you don't want to talk about friendship, I would rather be the first one who don't talk about friendship."

Young Master Zhu added: "That is true. If a person does not want to talk about friendship, this method is precisely the best one."

Zhao Yi-dao turned around and smiled: "But we are actually talking about friendship."

Young Master Zhu said that, "Certainly."

Zhao Yi-dao laughed and said: "It's laughable that they do not know that Million Gold Hall and Sharp Knife Clan have formed an alliance for three years."

Young Master Zhu said that, "I am a person who keeps one's mouth shut."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "I am too."

Young Master Zhu smiled said: "Therefore nobody will know about this matter."

Chapter 6 Part 3

The miserable shouts from outside were heard frequently like the crowing of the roosters in the distant place.

Bai Yu-jing's complexion was pale and his face just became more and more ironic. But he couldn't restrain revealing the sadness in his face.

He was certainly not sad for these people.

What he was sad for was the entire humanity – the people's greed and cruelty.

Yuan Zi Xia complexion was also pale. She suddenly sighed gently and said: "You finally guessed who will be the last one standing?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "In any case, it cannot be you."

Yuan Zi Xia nipped her lips and said: "You... ... You think I have deceived you, therefore you hope I would die little by little in front of you."

Bai Yu-jing shut his eyes. The sneer at the corners of his mouth had become very miserable. In a deep voice he said: "It is certainly not your fault."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "It is not."

Bai Yu-jing also sighed, said: "A person who got mixed in jiang-hu has to able to deceive others to survive. It was my mistake to let you deceive me. I cannot be resentful to you."

Yuan Zi Xia's face changed color. In a painful, low-spirited voice she said:

"But I... ... "

Bai Yu-jing had suddenly interrupted her speech and said: "But you are also mistaken."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Oh!"

Bai Yu-jing said: "If you think you can use the peacock map in your hand to coerce them into your wish, you are mistaken."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Why?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "The peacock map in your hand is basically the same as in their hand. When they wish it, they may take it away casually."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Do you think I do not dare to burn it?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "You do not dare, because if you burn it, you will also die, and die very quickly. Moreover, it is not going to be difficult to extinguish the candle in your hand by their Wugong."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "But a moment ago..."

Bai Yu-jing had interrupted her again: "They did it intentionally a moment ago, only because they were looking first for the opportunity to kill. When nobody is in the way, then they will take your peacock map." He slowly said: "Young Master Zhu always works very carefully. He has paid a lot for this peacock map, therefore he is not willing to take further risk."

Yuan Zi Xia suddenly turned her head, because by now she had heard Young Master Zhu's laughter. Then she saw that man in black and Young Master Zhu.

Young Master Zhu had folded his hands in front of him, standing in the entrance. He smiled: "I didn't realize that Bai-zi know me already."

Yuan Zi Xia belted out: "You go out now, otherwise I... ... "

She had not mentioned the consequence, when the candle in her hand had been cut up with a sudden flash of the knife. But the candlelight had not been extinguished. It cut up the candle in half, but the knife will always be ready.

The sword wielder Zhao Yi Dao.

He raised the knife steadily, and looked at Yuan Zi Xia coldly.

Yuan Zi Xia's face did not become red. She suddenly nipped her teeth, and made an effort to throw the peacock map to Young Master Zhu. She said loudly, "Take it away!"

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Many thanks."

He blurted out these two words while rushing in. With the back of his knife, he had nipped the peacock map. The candle was extinguished with the rise and the fall of the knife. In the meantime, he took the advantage of obtaining the peacock map.

His hands were really deft in this tight situation.

Yuan Zi Xia suddenly said loudly: "I gave this thing to Young Master Zhu. Did you see it got snatched by someone?"

Zhao Yi-dao's face changed quickly from the wild joy after the grab.

Young Master Zhu actually laughed: "We are brothers. Whoever takes this

thing, it is all the same."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "You do not fear he will have sole possession of it?"

Young Master Zhu said that, "We had talked about our friendship."

Zhao Yi-dao smiled as well: "It is good. We had truly talked about the friendship. If anyone wants to sow dissension, I will want his life first!"

Young Master Zhu however said: "Such being the case, you do not need to wait. Miss Yuan now has a very bad headache."

Zhao Yi-dao ferociously laughed: "I am the most adept at taking care of headaches."

Young Master Zhu said that, "I think it is better if you take care of Bai-zi first. He is a person who shows tender affection, and may not endure having to look at Miss Yuan's head being separated first."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "It doesn't matter who will go first. Sometimes my knife may cure two headaches at once."

Young Master Zhu said with a smile: "I think this knife is very interesting."

Zhao Yi-dao laughed loudly: "It is guaranteed to be interesting."

Yuan Zi Xia hung her face. She stared mournfully at Bai Yu-jing and said: "I have harmed you..."

Bai Yu-jing said: "It is not related at all."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I only hope you understand one matter:"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Just say it."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I truly have not lied on some things I said. Regardless of anything I said in other matters, but about you and me..."

END OF CHAPTER 6

Chapter 7: The first kind of weapon - TRANSLATED BY FASTCLOCK

Chapter 7 Part 1

Young Master Zhu laughed: "I know that you are sincere to him, therefore I will help you by letting you die together with him. If you have any speech you want to say, you should just wait until you're on the road to Hades."

This speech had not fully been said, his body suddenly stiffened. The corner of his eyes suddenly split open as if an invisible iron hammer suddenly struck him from the midair. And then his face got thoroughly distorted, before his body collapsed to the ground.

This man in black was certainly not with him, he was just standing still in there without any expression. However, there was a knife in his hand, a pointed knife with blood ... He finally did not stay behind Young Master Zhu. He certainly wouldn't have suspected him to do something like this.

Dawn.

The roosters continued to crow however now it seemed there was only the sound of Young Master Zhu's respite. He bent down on the ground like a cow panting for breath. The blood did not stop flowing from his wound on the waist.

The man in black coldly stared at him with an unusual ridicule in his eyes. He was certainly not ridiculing himself, only others.

Zhao Yi-dao stared with his mouth open.

If he had not seen this with his own eyes, he actually could not have believed that this was real.

Suddenly the sound of the panting breath also stopped.

Young Master Zhu's body had turned into putty, a bloody putty.

The man in black looked at the trickle of blood on the tip of the knife, before finally saying: "You would agree that when I kill people, a knife is sufficient."

Zhao Yi-dao step backed one by one and said: "But he... ... He certainly did not die immediately."

The man in black: "That's because I do not want to let him die too quickly, and also to let him feel the crime he committed to the others."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Actually who are you?"

The man in black: "You cannot guess correctly?"

Zhao Yi-dao looked at the entire expression of his face before his fear deepened. He finally sighed: "The skyhawk... You are Wei Tian-ying."

The man in black smiled.

His eye revealed a happy expression like a pointed knife, but there was no expression at all on his face.

Zhao Yi-dao said: "You have already come since the beginning, you have been with us all along."

Wei Tian-ying said: "Now don't you also think it's very funny?"

Zhao Yi-dao suddenly shouted out loudly: "Miss Yuan, quickly release Bai Yu-jing's accupoint. I will keep off."

Yuan Zi Xia sighed and said: "Why do you wait until now to let me release him? It is too late now."

She turned her head and smiled at Wei Tian-ying. She said: "Second brother, you said it was not too late presently?"

When he heard the two words "second brother", Zhao Yi-dao's entire person felt like being dropped into an ice hole from the midair.

Second brother.

Wei Tian-ying was unexpectedly her second brother.

They unexpectedly were in cahoots.

Zhao Yi-dao simply could not believe it. This kind of fact was too absurd, too strange.

Yuan Zi Xia had obviously stolen the Green Dragon Clan's "peacock map", the Green Dragon obviously wanted to kill her.

Wei Tian-ying was obviously the Green Dragon Clan's person sent out to pursue and kill her.

How could they possibly be in the same side?

Who could explain this kind of matter?

Chapter 7 Part 2

Zhao Yi-dao hung his head. He was looking at the knife and the peacock map in his hand like a dying mother looking at her son.

He did not have any other words.

He dropped his knife, then held out the peacock map with two hands to Wei Tian-ying.

If this occurred at another time, perhaps he could stall for time. But at present, all the impossible matters had all occurred that he suddenly discovered himself falling into an extremely complex, extremely ingenious, extremely fearful snare.

The most fearful thing was, even until now, he did not know how he could fall.

At this point, it had caused him to completely lose his fighting spirit.

Wei Tian-ying looked at the peacock map in his hand. The ridicule in his eyes became more obvious, as he lightly said: "You do not want to keep it?"

Zhao Yi-dao said: "I don't think so."

Wei Tian-ying said: "I don't think so."

He received the peacock map, and then without looking, ripped the map into pieces and threw it away.

The wind had blown, blown the torn pieces of the map like a flying butterfly.

Zhao Yi-dao was aghast.

For this peacock map, some people had betrayed their own people, their friends. For this peacock map, the blood which had flowed already could have dyed red all the lake water outside.

But presently Wei Tian-ying did not even look, and had conveniently ripped it into pieces. What was all this for?

Zhao Yi-dao could only show a bitter expression, before turning his head and faced Yuan Zi Xia. He said: "This map is false?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Right, this map is false."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Really."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Not really, the real one is in peacock village."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "You... ... Did you rob this from Gongsun Jing's hand?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I robbed this map."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "But this map is false."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I know."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "You knew perfectly well that it was false, then why also you had to take the risk to rob it?"

Yuan Zi Xia was smiling and said: "Because this matter is a snare."

She smiled happily and charmingly. Then, she proceeded slowly: "This most ingenious part of the snare is the fact that we already know the peacock map is false. If we do not mention this point, I am afraid you could not understand this issue forever."

Zhao Yi-dao simply wanted to just faint away.

For this map, they did not hesitate to go all out, to bleed, even did not hesitate to nip each other like the wild dogs.

But this map was actually counterfeit material, not worth a single cent.

For this map, there were countless tragic deaths washed in blood.

Not only one could not smile, but one also could not cry.

Actually he didn't know what kind of medicine Wei Tian-ying and Yuan Zi Xia were trying to sell.

Yuan Zi Xia said: "The peacock map was originally bought by second brother, spending a lot of money."

Zhao Yi-dao with a dry lip said: "But after buying, you discovered that the map was a counterfeit material."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Right."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "You have to swallow the damaged goods, but you did not dare to make it widely known. Because whoever spent the Green Dragon Clan's money only to buy a counterfeit material would not be forgiven by the Green Dragon Clan."

Yuan Zi Xia sighed, said: "Moreover second brother Wei also could not get this person, therefore I had to offer him an advice."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "What idea?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I must protect second brother by giving this map to Gongsun Jing. I am his immediate superior, so when I ordered him to handle the selling of second brother Wei's item, he certainly did not dare to suspect second

brother Wei."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "This hot potato arrived in Gongsun Jing's hands, his hands needed to be really broad."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "He should not receive it, but it was a pity that he had no alternative but to receive it."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "But... ... Why do you have to rob this hot potato from his hand?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Because I certainly want you to believe that this map is real."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "I do not understand."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "You are all very astute people. You certainly would not do business while suffering a loss."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Indeed we cannot."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "You ought to know also about the Green Dragon Clan's custom of not offending their jiang-hu's friend."

Zhao Yi-dao sighed and smiled painstakingly: "Indeed I know it."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Therefore before you bid, you certainly must have a look first at this map to see whether it was genuine or fake. According to the Green Dragon Clan's custom, this would not do."

She charmingly smiled: "Looking at it this way, do you see how the problem lies?"

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Therefore you simply stole the map, others certainly could not suspect again that it was false."

This was one of human weaknesses. Not only she understood this psychology very much, moreover she also used it very well.

Zhao Yi-dao sighs: "Add to the fact that Gongsun Jing ran away from the punishment immediately, we certainly could not suspect a foul play."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Therefore you certainly would be anxious to pursue."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Right."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "But if I could be very easily pursued by you, perhaps you would start to suspect something."

Zhao Yi-dao painstakingly said with a smile: "Right. Not getting something easily is indeed always more precious."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "But I must be able to be pursued by you."

Zhao Yi-dao had not understood and asked: "Why?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Because this map holds the key. We want you to believe that this map is real. We want you to see this map. We want you to kill one another in order to get this map, then... "

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Then what?"

Yuan Zi Xia easily said with a smile: "After waiting for your demise, we can bring back your gold jewelry. We do not spend any effort to bring it back, moreover we do not need to worry that some people would come looking for

trouble. Because you just kill each other and we are not related at all."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Originally you do this, because you want us to bring the gold jewelry."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "The money moves the will of the people, this saying you also ought to know."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "You pulled in Bai Yu-jing, because you also want something on his person."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "He has that sword also on his person."

She suddenly sighed and said: "But I am very grateful to him. If not for him to protect me, perhaps this plan would not be completely successful."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Why?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Because if we want this plan to be completely successful, Gongsun Jing certainly must die first, otherwise Fang Longxiang would also refuse stubbornly to be involved."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Why?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Because if they did not die, this map would not necessarily have the assurance to fall on the hands that are willing to go all out to get it."

Zhao Yi-dao thought about it before painstakingly said with a smile: "Right. Because we had the assurance of attaining this peacock map, therefore only then would we kill Miao Shaotian and the white horse Zhang San."

Yuan Zi Xia also gave a sigh and said: "But if not for Bai-zi's longevity sword,

how could Gongsun Jing and Fang Longxiang die that easily?"

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Had Gongsun Jing been kept in the dark like us?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Certainly."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Didn't he recognize you? Didn't he know that you were also a Green Dragon Clan's person?"

Yuan Zi Xia lightly said, "He was only a tiny world hall host (world hall host is the title in the clan-obviously we can see it's not a very high position now), when he met a Green Dragon Clan's person, nine of ten he probably would not recognize him."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "How did you swindle him?"

Yuan Zi Xia has smiled, said: "If I wanted his life it would be very easy, much less if I just want him to be swindled."

Zhao Yi-dao looked at her happy, and also charming smiling face. Finally he could not bear to emit a long sigh and said: "If I were him, I am afraid I would also be similarly deceived."

Yuan Zi Xia enchantingly said: "I am afraid you would be deceived as well, even more miserably."

Zhao Yi-dao said: "But since Fang Longxiang was also a Green Dragon Clan's person, why did you have to kill him?"

<It seems to be missing a couple of sentences here. Also this probably includes the cutoff where the third part of the chapter begins. From the later part of the chapter we can see that Fang Longxiang was too greedy even for Green Dragon Clan's taste.>

Zhao Yi-dao said in consternation, "Now it's not the right time?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Certainly it is not."

She smiled sweetly: "Now every cent of the money here would belong to me and second brother Wei."

Zhao Yi-dao was stunned momentarily. Then he smiled painfully: "I am also a world-wise person. I have looked at many sinister and ruthless people, and listened to many ingenious sly clever tricks. But compared with you, these people are simply like a child who are still nursing."

Yuan Zi Xia said with a smile: "Thank you the praise, I certainly would never forget it."

Wei Tian-ying suddenly said with a smile: "You have asked everything?"

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Yes."

Wei Tian-ying said: "Now haven't you already suffered some headaches?"

Zhao Yi-dao said: "Indeed this hurts very much."

Wei Tian-ying said: "You can attend to your own headache?"

Zhao Yi-dao sighed and said: "Luckily I also can attend to it, otherwise I am afraid it will hurt really badly."

He had really cured his own headache.

- A person's head if it had been chopped down, it would not hurt again!

Bai Yu-jing had continuously looked on. While listening to all these, his face was similar to Wei Tian-ying's, as if he had put on a mask.

“Easy to blend in” was also part of the “enduring technique”. But Young Master Zhu had never recognized him, certainly not because his “enduring technique” was very good.

That was because Young Master Zhu never really cared about the role of this person – just an obedient bodyguard. In Young Master Zhu's eyes, he was no more than a dog, very unimportant.

If he was willing to care about the others, perhaps he would not die so miserably.

Wei Tian-ying looks at the knife in his hand, before he coldly said: "Zhao Yi-dao was an intelligent person, he was so quick that his head had not hurt at all."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "When a smart person acts, he would not cause trouble for the others."

Wei Tian-ying said: "Bai Yu-jing?"

Yuan Zi Xia blinked her eyes for a short period of time and said: "It seems that his intelligence was inferior to Zhao Yi-dao."

Wei Tian-ying said: "Therefore he had to trouble you."

He suddenly stretched out his hand and delivered the knife in front of Yuan Zi Xia.

Yuan Zi Xia said: "You know I do not like holding a knife."

Wei Tian-ying said: "When you kill people, you do not use a knife?"

Yuan Zi Xia enchantingly said: "Moreover I also do not see the blood."

Wei Tian-ying said: "Can you make an exception this time?"

Yuan Zi Xia sighed and said: "You want me to do this matter, how will I refuse?"

She received the knife and turned around to look at Bai Yu-jing. She humorously said: "I really could not endure killing you but if I do not kill you, second brother Wei would be angry, therefore I had to apologize to you."

Bai Yu-jing said: "You do not need to be so polite."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I seldom use the knife, if this knife cannot kill you, perhaps it can hurt."

Bai Yu-jing said: "It doesn't matter."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Good, then I really would not be mad."

She suddenly turned around, the knife aimed at Wei Tian-ying.

A good quick knife.

Besides her, certainly no one else could say that she could not use the knife.

Wei Tian-ying's eyes had that ridicule expression. When this knife was launched, both of his hands moved and gripped the tip of the knife.

Yuan Zi Xia's complexion had finally changed, really changed.

Wei Tian-ying sneeringly said: "Do you know why I wanted to give this knife to you?"

Yuan Zi Xia was nipping her lips and shook her head.

Wei Tian-ying said: "I want you to kill me."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Why? "

Wei Tian-ying said: "Because I am like you, I also want to have sole possession of this treasure."

Yuan Zi Xia sighed and said: "Did you want me to kill you first, so then you can start to kill me?"

Wei Tian-ying said: "Right, otherwise I really could not endure to start."

Yuan Zi Xia sighs: "It looks like I had made a mistake after all."

Wei Tian-ying said: "Each people would all make a mistake unavoidably."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "But you are also mistaken."

Wei Tian-ying said: "Oh?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I must kill you, certainly not for wanting to have sole possession of it."

Wei Tian-ying sneeringly said: "Is it to rescue him?"

Yuan Zi Xia mournfully said with a smile: "Just look at me. If I were not moved by the true feelings, how could I make a mistake?"

Wei Tian-ying coldly said: "It is only a pity that he cannot rescue you."

Bai Yu-jing suddenly also blurted a sigh: "You are mistaken."

While saying these words, Yuan Zi Xia retreated by seven feet, the tip of the toe had nipped and shouldered the longevity sword.

Bai Yu-jing leaped up and grabbed this sword.

When he finished saying these words, he launched three sword strokes, the sword light like star showers in the Milky Way.

Wei Tian-ying's knife perhaps may put up with these three sword strokes. It was only a pity that he was gripping just the tip of the sword.

If his hand was empty, perhaps he may also fend the moves.

It was only a pity that his hand were gripping his own knife.

He retreated while turning the tip of the sword up with his hands. This change was unexpectedly very quick.

It was a pity that Bai Yu-jing's longevity sword was quicker.

Red and white merged with the flash of the sword. The two bloody hands which had gripped the knife fell together.

Chapter 7 Part 4

No one knew when, but the sun was already high, the light filtering through the window.

On the window there was a drawing of a plum blossom, which became a picture of a plum blossom with blood adornment.

Bai Yu-jing was calmly standing facing the window. After a very long period, he slowly said: "You knew that my accupoint had opened, therefore you did not start to kill me."

Yuan Zi Xia hung her head and did not speak.

Bai Yu-jing said: "Did you know?"

Yuan Zi Xia did not speak.

Bai Yu-jing suddenly turned his head to her: "Actually why are you here?"

Yuan Zi Xia suddenly smiled with a clear happy face. She enchantingly said: "Can you guess?"

She smiled really sweetly.

Bai Yu-jing sighed and said: "I am afraid I would not be able to guess forever."

Yuan Zi Xia focused her eyes; Suddenly scratching her head with her fingers she said: "One day you certainly will know it."

Bai Yu-jing was silence for a very long time before he suddenly said: "Good, now we go."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Go where?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Certainly to the Green Dragon Clan."

Yuan Zi Xia frowned: "Why go to the Green Dragon Clan?"

Bai Yu-jing sank his face, said: "You really did not know who I am?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Who are you?"

Bai Yu-jing coldly said: "I am in the Green Dragon Clan's 12 deities Red Flag elder (Hong-qi-lao). A lowly person like you certainly would not know me."

Yuan Zi Xia complexion had changed, really changed.

Bai Yu-jing calmly said: "You thought this matter was camouflaged that even the deities would not know. But actually Green Dragon's eldest child already saw it, therefore he had sent me to investigate in secret."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "You... ... You really must deliver me back?"

Bai Yu-jing said: "Certainly."

Yuan Zi Xia said: "You could be so cruel-hearted?"

Bai Yu-jing sneeringly said: "Coping with a cruel-hearted person, I am always impolite."

Yuan Zi Xia looked at him, before she suddenly bent down laughing, laughing until the tears run down her cheeks.

Bai Yu-jing was astounded instead. He looked at her startled and could not bear to ask: "Why are you laughing?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I am laughing at you."

Bai Yu-jing said: "Laughing at me? Why am I funny?"

Yuan Zi Xia reluctantly stopped her laugh and said: "You can act well in a play, but, if you are the Red Flag elder then who am I?"

Bai Yu-jing was astounded.

Yuan Zi Xia said: "Honestly I am telling you that I am one of 12 deities in the Green Dragon Red Flag elder."

Bai Yu-jing said: "You... ... You are? "

Yuan Zi Xia smilingly said: "Wei Tian-ying was addicted to gambling and had lost 302,000. He actually intentionally said he had bought the false peacock map; Gongsun was lascivious, he had seduced many women from respectable families; Fang Longxiang was greedy for money, he had embezzled 162,000 equities. These matters are well-known to Green Dragon's elder, therefore he had especially called me to sweep up the clan."

Bai Yu-jing said: "You alone?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "I usually work only by myself."

Bai Yu-jing said: "You want to sweep up the clan?"

Yuan Zi Xia said: "A person is enough."

Bai Yu-jing said: "But your wugong... ... "

Yuan Zi Xia lightly said, "As long as a person understands how to use her own strong point, she does not need to use wugong to strike the person."

Bai Yu-jing said: "What is your strong point?"

Yuan Zi Xia only smiled, did not speak.

She really smiled sweetly, was really beautiful.

Extremely beautiful...

"You have deceived me so many times, I originally wanted to deceive you too then let you know bit by bit. I could not suspect that it could be revealed by you," said Bai Yu-jing.

"When have I deceived you?"

"You have not?"

"If I had deceived you, why would I run away with you, the Green Dragon Clan Red Flag elder and all?"

"Perhaps you are not the real Red Flag elder."

"Hm... "

"Aren't you actually?"

"Can you guess?"

Bai Yu-jing knew he wouldn't be able to guess correctly forever, but this was unimportant.

More importantly, she stood by him now. Moreover she could never leave him

again. This was enough.

This was the first story, the first kind of weapon.

Our lesson in this story was regardless of how sharp was the sword, it would not compare to the captivating smile that could move it.

Therefore I said the first kind of weapon was certainly not a sword, but smiles. Only smiles could really conquer the will of the people.

Therefore when you understood this truth, you should unleash your sword by smiling a lot!

END OF CHAPTER 7

**END OF LONGEVITY SWORD - BOOK 1 OF 7 WEAPON SERIES BY
GU LONG**

Chapter 1: Five assassins

(1)

Dusk.

Under the setting sun, Gao Li was standing below the gold-lettered signboard of "Head of Sovereign Teahouse". He stood under the shadow, which was also covering his face.

It seemed as if his face was hidden forever in the shadow.

He was wearing an oversized blue taoist robe, extremely large, because he must hide a heavy and sharp silver spear under this taoist robe. With a sharp spear rubbing against his rib, that white shirt underneath was already drenched by the cold sweat. Before each subsequent killing, he was always very anxious.

This street was the most prosperous and lively place in the city, moreover it was also the liveliest time of the day.

He scanned through the bustling crowd, and saw in the opposite a water peddler.

This peddler's name was Ding Gan.

Ding Gan was a very big person. Although he was somewhat extremely fat, he actually had a very deft pair of hands. Presently, he was squatting in the roadside with a small knife, pouring the water into the basket. His technique did not look very skillful... That's because he usually only used the knife to kill. It was said that when he killed someone, the basket could be used for more than just to

hold the water.

The store in the opposite diagonal side of the teahouse was a very crude wineshop. It only sold the wine, but not the food.

The big wine jugs that were sitting on the table made the drinking person looked small, they were sitting on a bamboo stool and bringing their own food.

In this wineshop, there was only a person who did not drink.

This person's name was Tang Ye.

Tang Ye was very short yet strong, the disheveled hair was tied up with a white cotton strip.

Nobody knew who he was, nobody knew where he came from. They only knew that his mouth never stop chewing some kind of sunflower seed.

Some people said that originally he was a pirate in the east and an outlaw, but actually no one had ever confronted him with it. It was said that when someone dared to ask him, all he got was getting his tongue cut in the midnight.

Nearby him was a long pole that could be suspended on his shoulder, just like the one used by a coolie for carrying a burden. But he was certainly not carrying any burden, just like Gao Li was not a real taoist priest.

In this shoulder pole that was four feet three inches long, there was hidden a knife that could cut a horse down!

There was also another person with a coolie's appearance, sitting opposite eating the soup.

This person was very young, all the others called him Little Wu.

Little Wu was certainly Tang Ye's friend, yet he actually did not look like Tang Ye's friend.

They were radically two different kind of people.

Little Wu looked a very casual, a very sluggish person. When happy, he laughed very heartily, and he liked the wine very much.

Nobody could imagine how quickly and accurate he was when he killed people.

If he wanted to pierce your eyes, his sword would not pierce you in any other place.

His sword was also hidden nearby in the shoulder pole.

Gao Li saw ten paces further toward the right side a very large carriage under the tree shade.

The driver of the cart was very sleepy, the long horsewhip lying loosely on his hand. He was called Ma Bian. He had this long whip, this whip was also his life. If he did not have this whip, he would have died many many times. But this whip had always been in his hands, therefore he had not died. Instead, the others had died!

These five people came together.

Gao Li, Ding Gan, Tang Ye, Little Wu, Ma Bian.

When these five were together, they had to cause some surprising news.

This news would always involve blood!

(2)

July 15 (qi-yue-shi-wu-ri) was the middle of the year, and also the spirits' festival day.

"In July 1, the underworld lords decided the good and evil in the world, thereupon the taoist priests read the sutras trying to convict and extricate the spirits."

This was the explanation for why we should "lead a pious life" on this day.

But we should also say that "July 15" was not about a day, but about a secret organization.

A secret killer organization.

They decided others' good and evil, and then went about themselves to extricate the souls for the others. - To kill was also a way to extricate the souls.

Gao Li, Ding Gan, Tang Ye, Little Wu, Ma Bian, were precisely the five most fearful assassins in this organization.

Today they must kill Baili Zhang-qing.

"Liaodong Hero" Baili Zhang-qing!

Perhaps Baili Zhang-qing's wugong was not the highest in jiang-hu, nor the most prominent person by reputation, but his "Zhang-qing-piao-ju" (Zhang-qing escort bureau) was without a doubt the most successful escort bureau.

The Zhang Qing escort bureau had branches in all Liaodong cities, so wherever the Zhang Qing escort flag went, all things would be taken care of. Because not only Baili Zhang-qing was good to his people, but also his system

worked quite effectively. This time he entered the pass, because of the plan to unite four big escort bureaus in the Central Plains.

The rumor in jiang-hu said that these four big escort bureaus wanted to merge with "Zhang Qing", to manage together an unprecedented unified escort bureau. From then on, any goods that was transported from the northern six provinces to Liaodong area would all be handled by them alone. From then on, if an outlaw gang wanted to plunder the escort, the day they decided to do it would not be a good day for them.

This was indeed a very important matter, this kind of matter that could only be managed by Baili Zhang-qing alone. Therefore there were many people who thought he should not die, also there were many people who thought he should obstinately refuse this arrangement!

The twilight had gradually settled in.

Baili Zhang-qing would appear by himself ultimately on this street. He was a busy person, therefore his traveling schedule would always be tight. It was estimated that he would arrive here between 5 a.m. and 7 a.m. to eat in the restaurant under the teahouse, immediately he needed to rush away again.

But in "July 15"'s estimation, he would never be going anywhere else.

His group included four Zhang-Qing escort leaders, but aslo Zhen-Yuan escort bureau master (Zhen-Yuan = a town in Guizhou), and Zhen-wei escort leader (Zhen-wei = rising power).

This line of seven people were all masters.

But "July 15" actually already had plans to cope with them, this method was

extremely thorough and extremely effective.

The people they wanted to kill would never slip away.

Six days ago, they started to practice, they had practiced more than 60 times up to now.

They planned with great detail, each movement, that they know them like the back of their hands. Now what they only must do, was wait for Baili Zhang-qing.

He first must die!

(Updated on July 6, 2008)

(3)

"Baili Zhang-qing cannot die!"

Gao Li clenched his fists, the wind blew along the long street, blowing on his already soaked clothes.

His whole body felt ice-cold, his heart felt colder.

Each detail, each step, already had been arranged earlier.

As soon as Baili Zhang-qing stepped on the street, Ma Bian on the large cart would start to take the action.

Six steps of motions.

Ding Gan would throw the hidden weapon to alarm Baili Zhang-qing's horses.

After these two horses were frightened and ran away, Ma Bian emerged with the large cart and tried to cut him from the rest of his group.

Tang Ye would cut the 2 horses's front hoof with his horse knife.

Then, Gao Li and Little Wu would attack from both sides.

Ding Gan's again used the sabre aimed at his back.

They had practiced for themselves, these six steps of motions. When they felt they had achieved the quickest speed, they kept practicing completely completing the task.

After they had practiced 40 times, they could achieve this speed, but in order to be more reliable, they had practiced again 20 more times.

"Only successful task is allowed, never fail!"

Their motions would never fail, nobody could avoid the speed of this strike!

Certainly none!

"Zhen-Yuan Escort Bureau" master Deng DingHou, was perceived as the most skillful, bold person amont the four escort bureaus masters in Central Plains. He had initiated this plan, therefore he went as far as Liaodong to greet Baili Zhang Qing to enter the pass.

Deng DingHou person "Heavenly fist young Zhuge", originally was Shao Lin's common disciple, younger brother of Yu Zhong. His hundred steps of heavenly fist had practiced to 80-90% excellence, it was said that he would not be lower than the four law-protectors of Shao Lin Temple.

But Central Plains's four big escort bureaus' first master was certainly not him, but "Zhen-wei" escort leader "the universe pen" XiMen Sheng. His accupoint-sealing and his palm techniques could not be found anywhere else in Central Plains.

In addition, there were four more guards from "Zhang Qing" bureau, each had inborn uncommon strength. It was said that with their practiced skills, each of them could master and capture a tiger alive.

After "July 15" five assassins strike very quickly, could they drew back also quickly as a whole?

Sure!

Their retreat plan, was similarly nearly as thorough as the attack.

Ma Bian in the large cart, had packed it with expensive gunpowders, bought from the Guanxi thunderclap hall.

They first use the large cart to separate Baili Zhang-qing from the rest of his group. As soon as the strike was successful, they would initiate the gunpowder.

Then they retreated to the west.

By now the path would certainly be apparent, the horse of Deng DingHou would certainly be startled by the gunpowder detonation, therefore the five assassins could randomly draw back, and each person could disappear without a trace.

This motion was called the "heavenly clothes."

Because this original plan was really flawless!

Now Baili Zhang-qing's only opportunity was to change his travelling schedule inadvertently and did not go on this road.

"Divination, divination, divination"

The blind person selling the divination, had suddenly transferred from the corner, the left hand knocked the bamboo clappers, the right hand was lifting up plain white cloth face high.

"Heavenly clothes divination, sure to come".

Ma Bian's hand grasped his whip immediately, Tang Ye had taken up the

shoulder pole, Little Wu laid down the wine bowl, Ding Gan's water movement had also immediately stopped.

heavenly clothes' motion soon started!

Because this blind person's incurred shout was the signal which they had agreed upon.

This cloth incantation had started in one fell swoop, that Baili Zhang-qing had come according to his travelling schedule.

Since he had come, the plan could not simply fail!

Gao Li's heart sank for Baili Zhang Qing - Baili Zhang-qing could not die!

Now the only one who could rescue Baili Zhang-qing was him.

"July 15" was a very strict organization, he understood this very much. If anyone betrayed the organization, they could not live anymore, to just die was even more difficult. But he must rescue Baili Zhang-qing, if possible, because Baili Zhang-qing had rescued him before.

His palm was dripping with perspiration, he slowly put out a hand into his bosom, and gripped his silver spear. He saw seven people riding a horse slowly around the corner.

The first person who came had long eyebrows like the phoenix, wearing dark blue gown, and dried shark skin saddle. He sat well on the saddle, the waist was very straight, the eyes shone brightly, just like 11 years ago.

Some people simply would not grow old, Baili Zhang-qing was certainly this kind of people without a doubt! Moreover, even if he had changed a lot, people could still recognize him!

Some people originally had the fountain of life that would dismiss old age from mind with ease.

Gao Li only felt his blood welled up in his chest, like his whole body and throat had gelled up completely, not able to utter any sound at all.

He certainly must control himself with every effort.

He certainly wanted to shout loudly, to warn Baili Zhang-qing of the danger, of the assassins!

Seven horses had walked along the lane.

Behind him was Zhen-wei's "the universe pen" XiMen Sheng with white face, calm Deng DingHou, followed closely behind Baili Zhang-qing's horse.

Behind were young, formidable people, with brown yellow shirts embroidered with the tiger grain, the front jacket was open wide.

Their chest looked like they were made of steel and iron.

People on the road felt the imposing manner of this line of troops and could not help walking away and evading them in abundance, creating the path for them.

Now Baili Zhang-qing horse, are only 20 feet away from that coarse thread which would start the heavenly clothes motions.

Gao Li had gotten ahold of his spear, was preparing to run out, at the same time he would shout loudly to alert the police, at the same time he would attack.

But at this moment, he suddenly felt an equally ice-cold hard item, touching

his back.

A knife! A pointed knife!

Besides the knife he also heard an incisive sound behind his neck that said, "We have found out that Baili Zhang-qing have made a favor to you before, so as to avoid you awkwardly not doing your part, your position has been replaced, this time you may withdraw."

Gao Li's whole body was cold stiff like ice.

The pointed knife moved from behind, the knife point was in between his chest rib.

If the knife punctured him, he would never be able to utter any sound.

Only a person with the strictest training could understand this method on how to kill people.

He certainly understood.

Therefore, he completely could not move.

At this moment, Baili Zhang-qing's horse issued a startled hissing sound, and fled to the front.

Ma Bian's large cart had also run out to the middle of the street.

Baili Zhang-qing would die without a doubt.

Once heavenly clothes was in motion, it would never fail.

Any kind of accident, any possible change that might occur, had all been calculated.

That was why five assassins unexpectedly had come.

That selling-the-divination blind person walked to under the sign of the teahouse, suddenly from the supporting bamboo pole which he had, he had drawn out a long sword, and threw himself forward to attack Baili Zhang-qing.

He was not a real blind person.

On the other side, Tang Ye and Little Wu had also sprung into action.

”Runaway horse!”, the crowd called out in alarm.

The large cart had separated Baili Zhang-qing from Deng DingHou and the rest of the group.

Tang Ye’s four feet three inch long horse knife had flashed brightly, like dividing the rainbow.

Little Wu was following close behind him, in the hand the sword was dexterous and sharp.

Immediately Baili Zhang-qing had changed his color, reined in his horse.

But the long knife had attacked.

Little Wu’s sword had also pierced forward.

The blood splashed suddenly, someone shouted miserably!

The startled shout was unexpectedly coming from Tang Ye, Little Wu’s sword unexpectedly had pierced his back.

The blind person was startled, the sword movement became slow.

Having fought many battles, Baili Zhang-qing would certainly not let go of this opportunity, he flew off from the saddle quickly.

Just by the crashing sound heard, the flash seen, seven sabres would have severed him, if he had not flew off his horse.

Gao Li was staked by the person behind him, never imagining such turn of events could suddenly come up.

They have put these five people under close investigation: not only Little Wu had no relationship with Baili Zhang Qing, but he also absolutely did not have any interaction with the four escort bureaus in Central Plains.

He had also never put a step beyond the great wall.

Why did he want to betray the organization? Why did he have to rescue Baili Zhang-qing?

This person was first startled, but then he became angry. It's just that he did not know how to relieve this strain, when he suddenly heard the sound of a broken bone within him.

Gao Li's fist had hit on his rib.

When Gao Li attacked again with his fist, he attacked fiercely.

By the time this person dropped down, he had fled quickly.

Ma Bian had not lighted the gunpowder when the change had occurred.

Under his startled anger, he wielded his whip to entangle Baili Zhang-qing legs.

Baili Zhang-qing body flew above, he could not fend against this new danger, he could only watch the long whip poisonous snake came closer, when suddenly a silver light had flashed.

A silver spear had welcomed the whip and fended against Ma Bian.

Ma Bian himself crouched down, in case Baili Zhang-qing attacked back by sword.

Suddenly the sound of a thunderclap was heard, the spacious solid horse-drawn cart suddenly exploded.

The four persons with tigers grains yellow clothes, the brave fighter broke through. Two people... waved their hands, lifted themselves over the dead horses, with arms ready, flowing to Ding Gan.

Ding Gan's second flying dagger had just been released, another dead horse splashed the blood.

Seven sabres had unexpectedly all hit on the horse corpses.

He had not withdrawn when a pair of black iron judge pen had been waiting for him.

When the universe pen hit the accupoint, the world all knew about what happened.

Little Wu had met the blind person's three moves.

Two swords moved very quick, Little Wu sword was quicker, the sword light in a flash, in front of the blind person the chest part had been sheared open.

Little Wu had not pursued him, because by now Baili Zhang-qing sword had

also attacked.

Baili Zhang-qing wielded his sword on, but he was also busily saying to him: "Many thanks."

Little Wu had smiled.

Baili Zhang-qing's sword flash quickly and attack three times, while saying, "What is your surname, big helper... "

Little Wu had smiled and without waiting to say anything, he had fled from the place very quickly.

He knew that he was no longer needed.

Gao Li used his double spears.

By now but his double spears had remained still, because Deng DingHou's hundred steps of heavenly fist had compelled Ma Bian backward.

Ma Bian himself could not display his best moves, he got compelled into the corner.

The Shao Lin hundred steps of heavenly fist really had not allowed him to move his best.

Baili Zhang-qing swordstyle ruled over Liaodong, after all, he was one of seven big swordsmen at the moment.

Gao Li knew that he was no longer needed.

He was determined to pursue Little Wu.

He had felt an extremely strong interest to this mysterious youth.

Baili Zhang-qing seemed to shout, "Gao Li, brother Gao, wait, wait... ... "

Gao Li had not waited, he had also crossed over the ridge.

Baili Zhang-qing's benevolence had finally been repaid, he was not willing to implicate the others again.

Because he knew that "July 15" would not let any rebel be untouched.

He was a fugitive now!

Once he became a fugitive, he would never stop be a fugitive, until he died, this was his desperation fate, his destiny.

But he finally no longer owed a favor to someone.

For him, this was more than enough!

END OF CHAPTER 1

Chapter 2: Tears of the Prodigal Son

(1)

Night, moonlit night.

The moonlight was dim, Gao Li vaguely could see Little Wu's shadow ahead.

He was always very confident about his lightness skill, but he just found out that this youth's lightness kungfu was unexpectedly not under him.

Under the moonlight, the multiple layers of the ridges look like a row of wild animal's rib bones.

As soon as the top part of the crescent moon rose above the ridge, it was as if you could pluck it off with your hands.

Each one of us would fantasize that we could pick a star or pluck off the moon from the sky, but our desired moon within our heart were actually different one from another.

Why was the moon so high and unattainable?

For most of us, all we wanted was a tranquil life, a warm family.

But mentioned this to him (Gao Li), and that would be even more remote than the moon in the sky.

Without family or family members, without friends, nobody else understood how fearful was loneliness to him.

He was determined to overtake this friend.

He too needed a friend really—A friend with a similar destiny.

The multiple ridges flew under him, and passed very quickly.

Ahead there was some wilderness.

The wilderness under the moonlit night was colder, Little Wu suddenly slowed down, like he was waiting for him.

He also slowed down, he was no longer pursuing anxiously.

Two people in tandem, walking slowly one after another, walking even slower.

Suddenly, there was no sound at all in this world, only the sound of their footsteps.

Some stars started to rise up in the distant place, the cold moon was no longer lonely.

But the person?

Ahead there were some trees with large boughs.

Little Wu looked for a sparse tree with some large boughs, and leaped up to one of the big bough and sat on it.

Gao Li had also jumped up on a tree, and sat down.

The world was lonely, the breeze blew on the branches and the leaves. The moonlight, from the treetop, mildly creeping downward, calmly sprinkling light on their bodies.

Quietness was not loneliness, because presently someone shared this moment quietly together with him.

After a while, Gao Li had smiled suddenly, said: "I thought Baili Zhang-Qing must die surely."

Little Wu said: "Oh."

Gao Li said: "I have already joined 'July 15' for three years, until today I just found out that they have never really trust me."

Little Wu said: "They have never really trust anybody."

Gao Li said: "I would have never thought that you would unexpectedly rescue him."

Little Wu smiled, said: "Perhaps I never expect it too."

Gao Li said: "You know him?"

Little Wu said: "No, you?"

Gao Li said: "HeHe has rescued me."

Little Wu said: "You have gone to Liaodong?"

Gao Li said: "Mmm."

Little Wu said: "What did you do?"

Gao Li said: "Collecting wild ginseng."

His eyes had shone suddenly, recalling the past events and the fond remembrance, then said slowly: "Perhaps in my life, those are the most joyful days of my life, free, carefree, although taking a big risk, but it was actually absolutely worth it."

Little Wu said: “Worth it?”

Gao Li is smiling, said: “As long as you found a rare wild ginseng, you may live comfortably for one year.”

Little Wu said: “You found some?”

Gao Li said: “Because I found some, therefore I nearly died there.”

Little Wu said: “Why?”

Gao Li said: “A wild ginseng was originally not owned by anybody, whoever first discover it had the right for it, therefore you can leave behind your symbol there.”

Little Wu said: “Why do you need to leave behind a symbol there? Why don’t you just pick it?”

Gao Li said: “Plucking it is also similar to murdering someone, you must wait for your opportunity, because sometimes the wild ginseng grew like a person’s intelligence, if you are too anxious, it will crush it.”

Little Wu said: “You are saying that it can walk?”

Gao Li smiled, said: “You might think that this kind of matter is too mysterious, but actually it is absolutely true.”

Little Wu indeed thinks that was very mysterious, therefore he was listening.

Gao Li continued saying: “I had found a mature wild ginseng, I had left behind my symbol. But when I came again, I discovered that the symbol had been exchanged by others.”

Little Wu said: “Why did you leave?”

Gao Li said: "I was looking for a helper. Plucking it on the mountain, also need multiple friends, we altogether have nine people."

Little Wu said: "The opposite party?"

Gao Li gave a forced smile and said: "They, since they dared to do this kind of tyrannical shameless matter, the number of people were certainly more than that. They also have five of the Liaodong underworld gang's masters, they went to the mountain to evade their enemies."

Little Wu said: "Your wugong must be inferior at that time compared to now."

Gao Li said: "Therefore I was injured, and very heavily wounded."

Little Wu said: "Baili Zhang-Qing caught up by chance and rescued you?"

Gao Li said: "Right."

Little Wu said: "How come he got there in the nick of time?"

Gao Li said: "Because he has been following the five underworld gang's master."

Fortunately, there was such lucky occurrence in this world.

Because regardless of the matter at hand, the important thing was the outcome.

Little Wu was silent, he smiled suddenly and said: "When you discovered that the opposite party were five of the underworld gang masters, you must have thought that your luck had run out."

Gao Li nodded.

Little Wu said: "If not for those five people, Baili Zhang-Qing would not have come to rescue you."

Gao Li nodded again.

Little Wu no longer said anything, he believed that Gao Li had understood his meaning surely.

There was no true luck in the world, nor was there any true misfortune.

Between the good fortune and bad fortune, there was only a very thin subtle difference.

'Therefore, if you encounter an unfortunate matter, do not complain, do not be discouraged.

Even if you have been struck down as well, you just strive to become better, so long as one continues to live, there is another time to make a stand.'

The night was calmer.

After a very long time, Gao Li asked: "He had not helped you before?"

Little Wu said: "No."

Gao Li said: "Why did you rescue him?"

Little Wu said: "Because he rescued you, wouldn't you also rescue him?"

Gao Li said: "I have not."

Little Wu said: "If you plan on doing something, you certainly must do it, there is no need to ask someone else to do it for you."

He stared at a distant place, then said slowly: "Tang Ye was considered to be my savior, today I killed him; Baili Zhang-Qing was considered to be my enemy, today I had rescued him. Because that is what I want to do."

His face seemed to shine, either it was a reflection of the moonlight or it was

coming from within.

Gao Li felt a sort of glory.

He suddenly discovered that this youth was not a real sluggish person.

Little Wu also said: “If the four big escort bureaus in Central Plain joined up, in jiang-hu, there are many people who can benefit from that. When I rescued him, it was for these people, not particularly for him.”

Gao Li was staring at him, he could not bear sighing gently, he said: “You understand a lot of things.

Little Wu said: “Not a lot.”

Gao Li said: “Your swordsmanship is probably not comparable to Baili Zhang-qing.”

Little Wu said: “Oh.”

Gao Li said: “Baili Zhang-Qing has been one of the world-famous seven big swordsmen since many years ago.”

Little Wu said: “He places probably in the sixth place.”

Gao Li said: “You?”

Little Wu smiled, replied: “I am just a peon.”

Gao Li said: “But swordsmanship is not something you get from the birth.”

Little Wu said: “No, certainly not.”

Gao Li said: “Who taught your swordsmanship?”

Little Wu said: “You are asking my origin?”

Gao Li said: “I am very curious about you.”

Little Wu lightly said: “I did not expect you to be so curious unexpectedly.”

He indeed did not expect it.

A person in this organization must not have curiosity, nor could he have any sentiment.

They were together nearly every day in the same place, but they had actually never asked each other’s origin.

They would fight side-by-side, risked each others life, but they had never become really friends with each other, because friendship might soften the will of someone, their heart must actually be hard, the harder the better.

Gao Li said: “I am curious about you, perhaps only then can we become friends.”

Little Wu said: “A person with a friend dies early.”

Gao Li said: “A person without a friend cannot be considered living, he can be considered dead.”

Little Wu had smiled, said: “It looks like a person like you should not be in this organization.”

Gao Li said: “You think that is very strange?”

Little Wu said: “It is very strange.”

Gao Li also smiled, said: “I also want to ask you, a person like you, how could you have entered this organization.”

Little Wu was silent, seemingly pondering it.

Gao Li showed some deep thinking look, when he said suddenly: “The place where we live is not good.”

Little Wu nodded.

They lived in a room that was crude and barren, besides several beds, there was no other furniture.

Because any material enjoyment could possibly soften the will and the physical strength.

Gao Li said: “But at least in the place that we live, regardless of anything we do in there, nobody would interfere with you.”

The corners of his mouth revealed a miserable happy expression, then he also said: “That may let you feel that at least you have a place to go back.”

Little Wu could understand this kind of feeling.

Only a similar wandering prodigal son, could understand this kind of feeling, the misery and the grief.

Gao Li said: “Our day had not felt better.”

Little Wu nodded.

They could not see the sun, they could not laugh heartily, they did not feel the warmth, nor could they enjoy their lives.

All they do everytime, everywhere, was waiting for the next order.

Their spirit could never relax forever.

Little Wu had remembered each time he saw Tang Ye, Tang Ye was always sharpening his knife.

Gao Li said low-spiritedly: "But that kind of day was very routine, at least you can eat to the fullest every day, every day you may sleep on a bed, not in the rain."

Little Wu said: "When you joined them, was that only because you had nowhere else to go?"

Gao Li smiled miserably, said slowly: "I still have nowhere to go now."

Little Wu said: "Is the only shelter place for you, where you need to kill other people?"

Gao Li shook his head.

He could not say, because perhaps only because he could not endure to say it.

For a killer to have a safe feeling, he could only protect himself.

Because as a killer, he thought that most of the people in the world would only let him down.

Little Wu gave a long sigh suddenly, said: "I luckily also have a place to go."

Gao Li said: "What place?"

Little Wu said: "A wine place."

If you think that wine can be a diverting means, you are wrong.

If you ask me, what is the use of wine then?

Then I am telling you:

Wine is just like a shell, like a shell that a snail carries on its back, it may let

you evade the reality.

It may prevent a person to step on you, but you also cannot look up and see above.

(2)

Not only this place had some liquor, but it also provided women.

The liquor was some nice wine, the women were also quite attractive, at least under the light they looked quite attractive.

“You have not come to this place?”

“No.”

“I also have not.”

They made sure that none of them had come there, because only then they had the security that they could be safe.

“Since we have not come here, they will never find us here quickly.”

“But these women actually probably recognize you.”

Little Wu smiled, saying with a smile: “They don’t recognize me, only my money.”

As soon as he walked in, he put a big spindle of money on the table.

The women had taken care of the food and the wine, adding some powder and shouted: “The one who is not drunk today is a turtle.”

Gao Li was hesitating, he could not bear finally asking: “Is the liquor here

expensive?"

Little Wu was surprised suddenly.

He was really startled, because this was not the kind of question Gao Li should ask.

It seemed like it was their kind who would wonder through the lands, momentarily taking up gambling in life like a prodigal son, who could scorn at wealth and consider it as the muck, who would not hesitate to spend his own wealth.

Although the management in "July 15" was strict, but killing people carried a price, and the price was usually very high.

Therefore, after each successful task, they would spend and vent heartily for 2-3 days----Spending wholehearted to the fullest of the heart's content.

That was what the organization permitted.

But Little Wu remembered suddenly that Gao Li had nearly never went to drink and get drunk.

Was he a miserly person unexpectedly?

Gao Li saw him think about something and he smiled suddenly: "The liquor in this place, if it is very expensive, then I'll let you invite me. If you are not willing to invite me, I may just look on the side while you drink."

Little Wu said: "You do not have any money?"

Gao Li said: "No, because I am a skinflint."

Little Wu could not bear smiling and said: “But you are actually different from other skinflint.”

Gao Li said: “How come?”

Little Wu said with a smile: “Because you are willing to acknowledge that you are a miserly, therefore at this point, I should invite you.”

Gao Li also smiled, said: “I am a little different from other skinflint.”

Little Wu said: “Oh?”

Gao Li said: “I am a drunkard.”

In this world, a mean-spirited drunkard was indeed very rare, but Gao Li was indeed a drunkard.

He drank the liquor simply like a horse.

“A person who does not spend for the liquor, will always drink it very happily.”

“If you have to pay for it?”

“I drink very little.”

“I realized suddenly that you are very honest.”

“My other advantage is not that many.”

Little Wu laughed, Gao Li also laughed, because two people somewhat had been drunk by now.

Although their faces were smiling, but at heart they actually could not smile.

Some 5-6 women accompanied them originally a moment ago, now actually

only two left.

The older ugliest two.

One of the man had not welcomed the women originally, moreover they had discovered gradually that these two people were very mean-spirited, and one of them was not too extravagant.

“Where is Bing Bing? Wasn’t she here a moment ago?”

“She went out, she has an old customer looking for her.”

The old customer meant that he was a hospitable person usually, a hospitable person usually spent extravagantly.

“How about Xiang Wa (a fragrant baby)?”

“Also attending other guest.”

“Pa”, as soon as he patted the table, the wine pot on the table also tipped over.

“Attending guest? Aren’t we also the visitors?”

“Bo”, the wine cups also fell to the ground, fell smashing.

Suddenly, there were 3-4 people wearing sideways hats, and open-on-the-front clothes, starting to move on them.

The two were wearing a taoist priest's blue gown and a coolie's tattered clothes, certainly they didn't look like hospitable persons, nor extravagant persons.

This kind of visitors were many, there wouldn't be too few of them

The guys sneered: “You two want to drink? Or want to fight?”

Little Wu had a look at Gao Li, Gao Li had a look at Little Wu.

The two laughed suddenly.

Amidst the big laughter and the “crash-bang” sound, the table turned upside down.

The women called out in alarm and were running away, the guys shouted angrily and crashed down very quickly one over another.

Although they had not practiced Shaolin's hundred step heavenly fist, but the effects of their fists on these people were a lot harder.

Two people fainted, they both aimed hits at people and moved to the north, very quickly this place was strewn like a disordered chicken coop, with eggs all over the place. By the time the place had cleared up, both of them had fled to the wilderness.

Actually nobody had pursued them behind, but they still ran away very quickly.

They thought that running would also satisfy a very large craving.

After running away very hard, suddenly they found a blind alley, the two people stopped, started to laugh, laughed until the tears came out, laughed until they needed to bend their waists.

They wouldn't be able to say what was so funny, they would not be able to say for how long they laughed, until finally, they suddenly could not laugh anymore.

Little Wu looked at Gao Li, Gao Li looked at Little Wu

Two people felt suddenly they wanted to cry.

If you were wandering prodigal sons, could anyone understand your emotion, could anyone know your pains?

Except for the occasional event of getting drunk in the joyhouse, what other kind of venting activity could you also have?

You wanted to smile if you luckily have the chance to smile, if you wanted to cry, you could also cry.

Therefore you could continue to live.

(3)

It was very late at night.

Gao Li had lain down, down on the sewer nearby the blind alley.

The stars in the sky were bright.

The stars were sparkling in his eyes, his eyes were very black, very deep.

Little Wu was standing against the wall, looking at him with a strange expression on his face, was it sympathy? Pity?

Also did not know whether it was pity for the others? Or for himself.

He smiled suddenly, said: "I have a secret to tell you, do you want to listen?"

Gao Li said: "Sure."

Little Wu looked over the distant place, said slowly: "Now I also have nowhere to go."

He was also smiling, but the smile was like a dim light of a corridor in the night, similarly miserable.

Perhaps he did not smile that much.

Seeing this kind of smile, Gao Li felt a pair of unseen hands slowly twisting, twisting his heart and his eyes, as if they were twisting them for tears and for suffering.

Homeless, there was no place to go.

He mentioned it to him, but this was not a secret.

He also smiled suddenly, said: "Your secret is not very pleasant to hear."

Little Wu said: "Do you have a secret that is quite pleasant to hear?"

Gao Li said with a smile: "I have one."

He smiled also somewhat miserably, yet also somewhat mysterious.

Little Wu pressed immediately said: "Why don't you say it?"

Gao Li said: "If I say it, I fear that you would have a scare."

Little Wu said: "You can rest assured that my courage is not that small."

Gao Li said: "You want to listen really?"

Little Wu said: "Really."

Gao Li said: "Good, I will tell you, I have a woman."

Little Wu was probably really startled, said: "You have a woman? What type of

woman?"

Gao Li said: "Certainly a good woman."

A good woman meant that she did not ask for money.

Little Wu could not bear saying with a smile: "How could she become yours?"

Gao Li was staring at the stars in the sky, the eyes became gentle, as if he could look at her eyes in the stars in the sky.

Little Wu looked at his face's expression, he also could not bear asking: "Is she very beautiful?"

Gao Li nodded finally, said simply: "I guarantee that you have never seen a beautiful woman such like her."

Little Wu shook his head intentionally, said: "I do not believe you."

Gao Li had smiled again: "You say you do not believe it, for sure, that's because you want to coax me to lead you to her."

Little Wu had also smiled: "You are also very smart."

Gao Li jumped suddenly, clutching his clothes and said: "But I warn you, if you are impolite to her even a little, I will have it all out with you!"

Their spirits roused suddenly, because they finally found a place they could go.

A marvelous place.

A marvelous person.

(4)

Spring.

The spring had taken hold of all the four sides of the green hill.

The green water showed the upside down reflection of the green hill, collecting a calm pool in the basin.

The sky was blue, the cloud was white, there was a tinge of redness there from the sun's reflection.

Little Wu was breathing in the fragrance of the woods deeply, the clear water brought delicate freshness, bringing a little tipsiness.

Gao Li looked at his face, he said suddenly: "Jump in!"

Little Wu had smiled, said: "I don't want to commit suicide, why should I jump in?"

Gao Li said: "You need to wash your clothes, and wash yourself. I don't want her to smell the wine on your body, nor the smell of blood."

He stretched out his arms and jumped in first.

Little Wu saw that he put aside his silver spears at the side of the pond, he heaved a sigh in his heart.

The smell of the liquor could be washed clean, but the rank smell of blood could never be washed off forever actually.

He could not bear saying: "Why don't you wash these two spears?"

Gao Li said: "The spears are cleaner than the human."

Little Wu said: "There was no rank smell of blood on the spears?"

Gao Li said: "No, the human is the one who kill one another, not the spears."

He dived under the water suddenly.

Little Wu slowly loosened his sword, put it on the mountain stone, felt a sour taste in his mouth.

A human was the one who kill one another, not the sword, nor the spears.

Why did a human always kill one another?

He also plunged into the water.

A fish's world, was also cleaner than a person's world.

The water was limpid and ice-cold.

Gao Li sat on a big boulder under the water, Little Wu also studied him while sitting on a boulder under the water.

Although they also knew that nobody could sit there forever, but sitting there for a while, ignoring the present was good enough.

It was really beautiful here, very peaceful.

They looked at all kinds of fish swimming leisurely and carefreely in front of them, looked at the water plants, slender and wispy, dancing between the sand and the stones, this kind of feeling could only be understood by someone who had experienced it.

Unfortunately, they could not breathe under the water just like a fish.

The two people looked at each other. They knew that they could not last there

forever, and they need to come up together.

At this moment, they saw two fishing lines dangling under the water.

On the fishhook there was no bait, but actually a scabbard, and a red tassel of the spears.

Little Wu's sheath of his sword, Gao Li's red tassel of his spears.

These were their bait.

They did not want to fish a fish, only Little Wu and Gao Li.

The two persons kicked backward, fleeing by 20 feet behind the original place. Gao Li circled around, and communicated with Little Wu.

Little Wu flew upwards like the fireworks rocket.

The water splashed four times.

Little Wu already flew ten feet higher than the surface of the water, after inhaling a long breath, he held on to a tree branch by the water surface, hanging on the tree.

There was nobody by the bank of the pond.

Two fishing poles were fixed by the stone on the pond bank.

On the big stone there was also a smaller stone, which held a piece of paper.

And actually the spears and the sword on the stone had disappeared!

Little Wu's face had become pale like the color of the paper.

By now, Gao Li's head had came up quietly in the shallow water, the eyes were looking at each other without any color.

“Nobody?”

“No one.”

“What’s the writing on the paper?”

The two looked at each other, one went to the left one to the right, outflanking the stone.

There was nothing astir in the four directions, no sound, only the smell of the woods in the wind and the freshness of the water.

It was so beautiful, lonesome and quiet all in the world.

Only a fugitive, threatened for life, could feel the murderous intention in this kind of serenity and tranquility.

Only they could not observe the danger, the true danger.

They arrived finally near that stone, Little Wu lifted up the stone, Gao Li picked up that paper.

The paper was also wet, the above handwriting had been also slurred, as if wrote: “Be careful

They saw these two characters only, then a large rock fell upon them...

They certainly could fend that to the side.

But they had not.

For many years, they had trained and used many dangerous tricks, but this one was not considered dangerous. So long as the response of the person was quick, he might fend this stone.

Nobody in “July 15” would certainly think that this kind of trick might kill them.

For many years, they had experienced how to make people die, the ones that could make them fall for the trick, was surely the most dangerous, the most fearful plot.

Therefore when the large stone fell on them, they did not choose to fend against it, instead, they just moved along the stone, and fled by about 30 feet from it.

Immediately their hands had protected their faces.

Then they immediately heard an earth-shattering big quake.

“July 15” had already that batch of gunpowder which was bought from “the thunderclap hall”, all tied up on this large stone.

If they fend the stone, even if they had not exploded into fragments, they still would be hit into pulp by the exploding crushed stones.

But they were still complete, this was not luck

During the blast, not only did they not cover the head, they never really stop moving, only protecting their faces, they had flew upwards steeply, and moved apart by 100 feet.

They jumped three times, fled very quickly, as the sound of the explosion echoed through the valley, the rock splinters fell down like rain into the pool of water.

On top of the cliff, three people were looking downward to look at what happened, one of them was precisely Ding Gan.

He discovered that Little Wu and Gao Li had appeared suddenly on the cliff, his face was like a person who just got slapped.

Gao Li coldly looked at him.

Little Wu actually smiled, said: "I did not expect that you have not died."

Ding Gan breathed deeply once, he restored his calmness and coldly said: "I also did not expect that you have not died."

Little Wu said: "Depending only on you three people, it would not be easy to kill us."

Ding Gan was pale, he had no alternative but to acknowledge.

Little Wu said: "But we, if we want to kill you? You think that would be easy?"

Ding Gan said: "Why do you want to kill me?"

Little Wu said: "Because you must kill us."

Ding Gan said: "You know that the one who must kill you is not I."

Little Wu nodded, he also had no alternative but to acknowledge.

Ding Gan said: "Murder, since that is our occupation, we cannot kill people with no reason at all."

Little Wu said: "Indeed we cannot."

He turned on the two people standing beside Ding Gan.

These two person had yellow complexions, sickly appearance over the face, the pairs of hands were actually black like iron.

Little Wu said: "I did not expect that masters of the eagle claw skills could unexpectedly have also joining 'July 15'."

This person sneered and said: "Your excellency have good eyes."

Little Wu said: "This is the first time you have your chance, you would certainly not willing to come up empty."

Ding Gan said: "They will not come up empty certainly."

His folded arms were in front of him, and now they were in the same position again.

But the two sabres had sheared into these two person's throats suddenly, shearing very deeply.

They had not called out in alarm, they had not struggled, the two people were suddenly like two wooden logs falling down the cliff.

Ding Gan then clapped his hands and said lightly: "Because they will not go back."

Gao Li looked at him, on his face there was no expression.

Little Wu said: "As soon as they die, you might go back."

Ding Gan said: "If we had killed you, I could go back, too. But killing them is easier than killing you."

Little Wu said: "At least, they will not guard against you."

Ding Gan said: "Therefore I chose correctly."

Little Wu said: "But they actually had chosen wrongly!"

Ding Gan said: "Oh."

Little Wu said: "They should not have come with you."

Ding Gan said: "I must go on living."

Little Wu said: "You can go down now."

Ding Gan said: "Now that they have already died, nobody would know anything about the matters here."

Little Wu said: "Therefore after you go back, any rumors are quenched."

Ding Gan said: "But, I have already said that I will not kill people without a reason."

Little Wu said: "How do you know that we will let you leave?"

Ding Gan said: "Because even if you kill me, you still do not have any advantage."

Little Wu said: "Oh!"

Ding Gan said: "I have already killed them, I certainly will not reveal your whereabouts again, otherwise July 15 will also never forgive me."

Little Wu said: "What is the advantage of not killing you?"

Ding Gan said: "I can destroy their corpses and leave no trace of these two people, I can also go back and say that you simply have not taken this road."

Little Wu said: "Your way of achieving the desired result is actually very thorough."

Ding Gan said: "I have done this line of work for ten years, if you do not want to work thoroughly, how can I also live."

In his ashen gray eyes, he unexpectedly also revealed a miserable sorrowful color.

In this world, among the many people who live, most of them were dissatisfied, some people wanted more wealths, some people wanted more authorities.

But for these people, so long as one could live, that would not be easy.

Little Wu sighed suddenly, said: "So long as you can live, you would do anything!"

Ding Gan frightfully nodded, said: "Yes, I would do anything."

Little Wu said: "Good, I will let you leave."

Ding Gan did not say a word, and turned around to leave.

Little Wu smiled and said: "Wait a moment."

Ding Gan waited.

Little Wu said: "Do you know why I let you leave."

Ding Gan shook his head.

Little Wu said: "Because you are no longer alive, you are already dead!"

Ding Gan had walked away, Gao Li was still standing, not moving.

Then he bent his waist and suddenly vomitted.

Little Wu looked at him, he waited for him to stop, and then he sighed: “You are afraid that you would turn into him later.”

Gao Li showed his painful face and said: “Perhaps, I am already just like him now.”

Little Wu said: “You are different.”

Gao Li said: “But I might do a similar thing, if I were him.”

He made an effort to clench his fists, and said word by word, “Because I must go on living, I must goes on living.”

Little Wu said: “You fear death?”

Gao Li said: “I do not fear death, but I must live.”

Little Wu said: “For your woman, you must go on living?”

Gao Li had turned his head away suddenly, looking at the white clouds in the sky.

Little Wu could not see his face, but he actually could see his hands tremble.

After a very long time, Gao Li only then sighed: “I did not expect that they unexpectedly could pursue here, moreover they pursue here so quickly.”

Little Wu said: “You have not come here before?”

Gao Li said: “I have come here, Shuang Shuang lives nearby.”

Little Wu said: “Shuang Shuang?”

Gao Li said: “Shuang Shuang is my woman.”

Little Wu said: “You have come here before, this time you probably should not have come here. Perhaps they also know about Shuang Shuang and this place.”

Gao Li said: "Perhaps."

Little Wu said: "Perhaps they have lined up a trap for you, just waiting for you to go."

Gao Li said: "Perhaps."

Little Wu said: "But you must go?"

Gao Li said: "I must go certainly."

Little Wu said: "You know perfectly well that the bait will drop, and you still jump in."

Gao Li said: "I must jump in."

Little Wu said: "Why?"

Gao Li said: "Because I cannot let a person keep Shuang Shuang trapped."

Little Wu did not speak, he could not say anything anymore.

He detected suddenly that this indifferent heartless executioner, had unexpectedly an indescribable sentiment towards Shuang Shuang.

She was worthy of everything he was working for, she was worthy of his life.

Gao Li had turned his head around and stared at him suddenly, he said: "I will go now, you do not need to go."

Little Wu nodded, said: "I indeed do not need to go."

Gao Li had patted his shoulder, he also no longer said anything--Also could

not say anything again.

But when he walked, Little Wu actually fell behind him.

His eye has shone, he actually intentionally put on a serious face and said:
“You do not need to go, why don’t you go away?”

Little Wu smiled and said: “Although I am not like a person who keeps walking into a trap, but if I have a friend to accompany me, walking into a trap is not a big problem...”

Chapter 3: Shuang Shuang

(1)

Dusk again.

The far mountain turned from bluish green into dark grey in the setting sun, the current of springwater arriving, had become slower. The breath of wind was actually more fragrant, because the fresh flower bloomed on the hillside, the colorful fresh flower quietly embraced the houses nearby.

A small bridge.

Running water.

A small, small access in front of the running water, on the hill slope.

In the courtyard there were some planted flowers.

A grizzled, large, and tall old man, was chopping firewood in the courtyard. He only had a hand. But his hand was extremely keen, actually extremely powerful. He used the tip of his toe to steady the wood, with the one hand, the great axe gently fell, with a "chop" sound, the wood divided into two halves. His eyes were far away like the far mountain, they were strangely remote and desolate. Perhaps only a person with such innumerable years of experiences could have eyes so remote and so desolate.

Little Wu and Gao Li walked in.

Their footsteps were very light, but the old person has turned head immediately. He saw Gao Li. But there was no expression in his eyes, he only stood there calmly, until Gao Li reached him, and then he slowly laid down his axe. Then he suddenly knelt down, kneeling down to Gao Li, like a lackey seeing his master. But there was still no expression on his face, nor did he say a word.

Gao Li had not said anything, he only patted his shoulder, the two people were like playing the role of silent play. But, it was only a pity that nobody else knew the meaning of this play.

Little Wu was also like a wooden statue standing there. Luckily at this moment, there was some noises in the room. A gentle and charming sound, it was a young girl's sound.

Shuang Shuang.

She said in a gentle, light voice: "I knew for certain that you have come back, I know." The sound was filled with loving, the kind which narrated and conveyed the tender feelings of the speaker.

When Gao Li heard this voice, his eyes immediately revealed the utmost tender feelings which one would not be able to narrate.

Little Wu was in a daze. He suddenly felt that he could not say how much he wanted to have a look at this woman.

"She is certainly worth all the effort a man could make, just to please her."

The old person had turned away, started to chop the firewood again, "chop ", the firewood cleaved in two.

She had not come out. Little Wu had entered the room with Gao Li. He suddenly detected that his heartbeat was palpitating quicker than the usual.

"Actually what kind of woman was she? Actually how beautiful?"

The living room was very, very clean, the several windows were bright, spotless. There was a carved door on one side, with a bamboo curtain hanging on it.

Her voice came from this door. "You have brought a guest?" She unexpectedly could listened to the sound of their footsteps.

Gao Li's voice also became a lot gentler, "He is not a guest, he is a good friend."

"Then, why haven't you asked him to come in?"

Gao Li had patted Little Wu's shoulder, smilingly he said, "She wants us to go in, so we go in."

Little Wu said, "Yes, let's go in."

This speech was said meaninglessly, because his heart was thinking about something else. Then he was walking forward. Suddenly his thought had stopped immediately, all the expectation and the heartbeat had all seemed to

stop.

He finally saw Shuang Shuang. This first impression, he believed firmly was something he himself would never forget eternally.

Shuang Shuang was leaning against the bed and clutching the light-colored bed sheet. Her hands were whiter than the bed sheet, so white that it became almost transparent. Her arms were thin and delicate, just like a child. Her eyes were very big, but they were actually dusky and without any color.

Her face was even stranger.

Nobody could describe the appearance of her face, nobody could even imagine. It certainly was not ugly, it also was not imperfect, it actually was like a mask of a beautiful woman that a shoddy artisan made, the mask of a beautiful woman that was distorted.

The beautiful woman that Gao Li would not hesitate to sacrifice himself, was not only a malnourished deformed person, moreover she was a blind person.

Inside the room, a jar was filled with the fresh flowers, there were all kinds of exquisitely made puppets and toys. These exquisite things, were certainly all expensive. The flowers were just plucked, bright and fragrant, the comparison with the mistress in the room was pitiful and also laughable.

But her face actually completely did not show any feeling of inferiority or pity, instead it was filled with happiness and self-confidence. Her expression was unexpectedly completely similar to a genuinely beautiful woman. The feeling that came from knowing that all men in the world were secretly admiring her.

Little Wu was completely astounded.

Gao Li had stretched out his arms, and enfolded her within him. He gently held her in his arms and said: "My beautiful woman, my princess, you know I always think of you... If I could not be here as quickly as possible, then I would have gone insane."

This kind of speech was simply disgusting, so extremely disgusting that one would have to feel sick to the stomach. But the glory on her face actually made Shuang Shuang brighter, she lifted the small frail hand, and was gently patting his head. It looked like she was treating him as a child.

Gao Li had indeed resembled becoming a child, resembled like there was nothing in this world that would make him happier than to adhere to her wish.

Shuang Shuang said with a smile: "You just spout some lies, if you really think of me, why did not you come back earlier?"

Guang Gao Li intentionally gave a sigh and said, "I certainly also want to come back quickly, what a pity I also want to make some money, then I can come back to buy some things for my little princess to eat, some nice things to play with."

Shuang Shuang said, "Really?"

Gao Li said, "Certainly, you want me to dig out my heart and give it to you?"

Shuang Shuang smiled and said, "I also thought that you have been captivated by other women outside."

Gao Li said, "I can look at other women outside? Which woman in the world can also be compared to my own little princess!"

Shuang Shuang smiled happily, actually she intentionally shook her head and said, "I do not believe you, outside there is certainly more attractive woman compared to me."

Gao Li decidedly said, "No, absolutely there is none."

He winked for a short period of time, suddenly he continued, "I originally heard inside the palace wall that there is also a princess, who is very beautiful, but as soon as looked afterwards, I only found out that she was not half as beautiful as you."

Shuang Shuang was calmly listening, she smiled very sweetly, suddenly she kissed him on his face.

Gao Li seemed to have become so happy that he almost fainted. This full-grown seven feet-high person, a young abnormal blind person, two people unexpectedly was together flirting with one another, the combination seemed to be disgusting and yet interesting.

This kind of situation was not only laughable, it was simply too funny. But in Little Wu's heart , he could not even think about laughing, instead he felt bitter, acid pain in his heart. He only felt he wanted to cry.

Gao Li loosened his skin pouch from his waist. The skin pouch had been poured out, inside were 20-30 spindles of gold, all poured on the bed.

He was holding Shuang Shuang's little hand, lightly tracing these gold, his facial expression was very satisfied, as he proudly said, "These are all my gains in these months, they can buy many things for our little princess."

Shuang Shuang said, "Really, they are your gains?"

Gao Li said in a big voice: "Certainly, for you, I cannot steal or rob other people.

Shuang Shuang's look became gentler, she lifted his hand, lightly caressing his face, and said in a supple voice: "I have a man such as you, I am really, really proud of you."

Gao Li was staring at her, the pale color of the her happy face, thin and pale, his indifferent face suddenly also revealed indescribable feeling. The crookedness of the world and the vicious attack he received away from here, was now already completely forgotten.

Little Wu had never seen such kind of expression, he had also never thought that he could see this kind of expression on his face. To her, he had seemed to have completely turned into another person. Although Shuang Shuang could not see the expression on his face, but she obviously could feel it. Therefore, she was also completely satisfied and happy.

You can say that they do not match?

Little Wu suddenly also thought that she was very beautiful. A woman so long as she could make a man feel happy, even if there were some flaws, why would that be a problem?

After a long, long time, suddenly Shuang Shuang's face reddened. She smiled and said, "Didn't you say a moment ago that you have brought along a friend?"

Gao Li had also smiled and said, "You see, as soon as I see you, I am immediately lost, and have forgotten everything, including my friend."

Shuang Shuang said, "You say such things in front of other people, aren't you afraid that they would laugh?"

Gao Li said, "How can he laugh at us, this boy now certainly envies me awfully!"

He looked at Little Wu, his face was filled with the color of hope.

Little Wu sighed and said: "You always said in front of me that, your little princess is the most beautiful woman in the world, only now I know that you are a very deceiving person."

Gao Li's complexion changed immediately, went all out to wink and said, "How have I deceived you?"

Little Wu said, "Who would have such a beautiful face in this world? She must have come from heaven."

Gao Li smiled.

Shuang Shuang also smiled.

Little Wu lightly hit Gao Li's shoulder with his fist, saying with a smile: "To be honest, I really envy your fortune, your precious match with her."

Gao Li intentionally sighed, said, "To be honest, I really am not worthy to be joined to her, but it is only a pity that she must like me."

Shuang Shuang said with a smile: "You seemed to have more and more thick-skinned face."

Gao Li said, "I learn quickly with this boy."

Three people also laughed, Little Wu suddenly also detected that he had never been happier himself.

Shuang Shuang slept very early, after she finished eating the food, Gao Li took her to bed, and also covered the quilt for her. She was like a spoiled child, every little thing was being taken care of by him. But she was actually giving an indescribable joy to him.

Now the star had risen.

Gao Li and Little Wu had spread a straw mat in between the flowering shrubs, calmly lying down under the starry sky.

The night was cool like water. The starry sky was remote and magnificent.

Little Wu suddenly gave a long sigh and said, "What you said were true, she is indeed a marvelous woman."

Gao Li had not spoken.

Little Wu said, "Her appearance is perhaps not beautiful, but her heart is actually very beautiful, perhaps even more beautiful than the majority of the beautiful women in the world!"

Gao Li had not spoken.

Little Wu said, "I have always felt strange that you can be such a cheapskate. But now I have understood.". He sighed and continued, "For such a woman like her, whatever you do, it will certainly worth it."

Gao Li suddenly said that, "Perhaps I do it all not for her."

Little Wu said, "You do not?"

Gao Li also sighed and said, "If I want to appear as noble and gentlemanly, I certainly can say that it is all for her. But in my heart, I know that I do everthing for myself."

Little Wu said, "Oh!"

Gao Li said, "Because only when I am here, my heart can feel the peace, the joy. Therefore..." He slowly continued, "After a while, I must always come back

here, stay for a few days. Otherwise, I sense that I would have gone crazy already."

A person worked very much like a machinery. Every once in a while, it must be maintained, be refueled. Little Wu certainly understood about this.

He was silent for a very long time, he suddenly also asked: "How did you meet her?"

Gao Li said, "She is an orphan."

Little Wu said, "Her parents?"

Gao Li said, "They have already died, when she was 13 years-old, they have already died."

His face revealed some pain before he continued, "They only have her, a daughter, in order to prevent her from being sad, they have kept saying since she was small that she was the most beautiful child in the world, she... ... She certainly cannot see for herself."

Could not see for herself was certainly not unimportant, most importantly, she also could not see the others. Because she could not see the others, therefore only then she could not compare other people with herself.

Little Wu gave a long sigh, low-spiritedly said, "She is a blind person, this is originally her misfortune. Looking from this point, this becomes instead her fortune."

The distance between being happy and being unfortunate was perhaps very subtle.

Gao Li said, "Sometimes when I have received a very heavy wound, without any intention I arrived here, at that time her parents had not died, they cured the wound for me, day and night they looked after me, they never queried me about my origin, they also never treated me as a scoundrel."

Little Wu said, "Therefore you come here more often later?"

Gao Li said, "At that time I have treated the people here as my family, when it was lunar new year's time, regardless of where I am, I must find the way to come back here."

Little Wu said, "I understand your feeling."

His face had also revealed some very strange kind of pain. This person who seemed like a very open and bright youth, might have the pain and the secret in his heart that was not present in other people.

Gao Li said, "Afterwards... ... Afterwards her parents have died, just before the end, they hold my promise to take care of their only daughter, they certainly did not hope that I would marry her, but only hoped that I can look after her like a younger sister."

Little Wu said, "But you have married her?"

Gao Li said, "Now I have not, but later I will certainly marry her."

Little Wu said, "In order to repay a debt of gratitude?"

Gao Li said, "Yes. "

Little Wu said, "You really love her?"

Gao Li was hesitating before he slowly said, "I do not know whether or not I really like her, I only know... ... Only know that she can bring me joy, she can bring the best out of me."

Little Wu said, "Why haven't you married her quickly then?"

Gao Liyou was silent for a very long time, he suddenly smiled and said, "Do you want to drink our celebration drink?"

Little Wu said, "Certainly."

Gao Li had sat up, his eyes had suddenly lighted up and he said, "Are you willing to remain here for several days.

Little Wu said, "I have nowhere else to go in any case."

Gao Li made an effort to pat his shoulder and said, "Good, I certainly ask you to drink the celebration drink."

Little Wu jumped, he made a huge effort to pat his shoulder and said, "I can

drink your celebration drink as soon as possible."

Gao Li said, "I will prepare it tomorrow with the elephant."

Little Wu said, "The elephant?"

Gao Li said, "The elephant was the person with one arm that had prepared the food for us a moment ago."

Little Wu said, "What kind of person is he also?"

Gao Li smiled mysteriously and said, "You watch him?"

Little Wu said, "I thought that he seemed to be an odd person, moreover he must have had a very extraordinary background."

Gao Li said, "You watch him use the axe?"

Little Wu said, "Yes."

Gao Li said, "What do you think of his hand?"

Little Wu said, "It seems that it is certainly not under you or me."

Gao Li said, "Your judgment is really good."

Little Wu said, "Actually who is he? How can he get here? Why does he specially respect you?"

Gao Li had smiled and said, "These matters you will later perhaps know gradually."

Little Wu said, "Why don't you tell me now?"

Gao Li said, "Because I have promised him, I would never tell his matter to any person."

Little Wu said, "But I... ... "

This speech was not completed, his body suddenly soared like arrow towards a clump of everflowering rose on a hillside. His body skill was dexterous and exquisite, moreover it was extremely special.

In the flowering shrubs someone said in a low voice: "Good lightness kungfu, it is really worthy of the famous family."

Little Wu's face changed color, he called out in a low voice, "Who are you?"

While saying it, he had sneaked into the flowering shrubs, where the person's voice came out a moment ago. He had not seen anyone. The flowering shrubs was empty.

The star and moon in the sky, the light of the late night was dimmer.

Gao Li had caught up with him, he knitted his brows: "Were they the people from "July 15" that have come to pursue?"

Little Wu said, "I don't think so."

Gao Li said, "How do you know it's not?"

Little Wu had not replied. His face was very strange, as if somewhat surprised, but yet there was some fear. Since he calculated that it was not the organization's people who pursued, why was there some fear?

Although Gao Li could not think through, he also did not ask again. He knew that if Little Wu was not willing to say a matter, it was pointless to ask.

Little Wu was silent for a very long time, he suddenly also asked: "The elephant?"

Gao Li said, "Only fear that he is already asleep!"

Little Wu said, "Sleep where?"

Gao Li said, "You want to look for him?"

Little Wu had reluctantly smiled, said, "I... ... Can I go ask him to chat?"

Gao Li had smiled, said, "Can't you see that he is not a person who likes chatting very much?"

Little Wu vision flashed, his face became unusual and slowly said, "Perhaps he likes to chat with me."

Gao Li was staring at him.

After a very long time, he finally nodded, "There are very many strange matters already..."

(2)

The elephant was certainly not asleep. When he opened the door, he wore his shoes, his eyes were not even a bit sleepy. Not sleepy, and without expression. Whether he looked at anyone or not, he seemed to be continually looking at some wooden stuffs.

Gao Li had smiled and said, "You have not slept?"

The elephant said, "A sleeping person cannot open the door."

He spoke very slowly, very stiffly, as if he had not spoken for a long time, as if it was unfamiliar to him. Gao Li appeared very surprised, as if he had not heard him speak for a long time. The room was very bare, there was nothing material except what he needed, no other thing was available. He simply practiced an ascetic monk's life.

Little Wu only felt that this place and Shuang Shuang's room were extremely

the opposite of each other, like two completely different worlds. This big and tall person was vigorous and healthy, a strong, callous, old person with one arm, also he was completely different from Shuang Shuang. If there was no extremely special reason, such two people could not live together.

The elephant already pulled forward the stool which was put together with some nails and said, "Sit down."

In the room there was altogether only one stool, therefore Little Wu and Gao Li had not sat down.

Little Wu stood in the entrance, the eyes looked straight at this old person and suddenly said, "You have seen me before?"

The elephant shook his head.

Little Wu said, "But you recognize me!"

The elephant shook his head.

Gao Li looked at him, also looked at Little Wu and said with a smile: "He has never seen you, how can he recognize you!"

Little Wu said, "Because he recognized my lightness kungfu."

Gao Li said, "Is your lightness kungfu different from any other people?"

Little Wu said, "Yes."

Gao Li said, "Why can't I see that?"

Little Wu said, "Because you are too young."

Gao Li said, "Are you really very old?"

Little Wu had smiled, he had only smiled.

Gao Li asked again: "Even if your lightness kungfu is different from anyone else, he had never seen it."

Little Wu said, "He has seen it."

Gao Li said, "When?"

Little Wu said, "A moment ago."

Gao Li said, "A moment ago?"

Little Wu had smiled, he did not say anything, his eyes had focused on the shoes of the elephant. The shoes had some leftover wet soil.

The recent weather was continuously very sunny, only some soil part of the flowering bushes was wet, because at dusk the elephant watered all the flowers every day. But when he stepped on the wet soil at dusk, the shoes should already

be dry by now.

Gao Li was certainly not a slow reacting person, he understood immediately that the person who hid a moment ago in the flowering shrubs was him.

"Is it you?"

The elephant certainly had not denied it.

Gao Li said, "You really recognize him?"

The elephant had not denied it.

Gao Li said, "Who is he? How do you recognize him?"

The elephant had not directly replied, instead he actually turned his head and coldly looked at Little Wu. He said, "Why don't you go back?"

Little Wu's complexion had changed and said, "Go back? Where should I return?"

The elephant said, "Go to your home."

Little Wu had not certainly asked, "How do you know where is my family?"

He instead asked, "What if I do not want to go back!"

The elephant said, "Because you must go back."

Little Wu also asked: "Why?"

The elephant said, "Because your father only has a son like you."

Little Wu's body suddenly stiffened, as if he was suddenly nailed into the place. He was staring at this old person. After a very long time, he only said word by word, "You are not the elephant."

Gao Li easily said, "He certainly is not an elephant, he is a person."

Little Wu paid no attention to him, instead he was staring at this old person and said, "You are Handan (name of a city in Hebei) Jin Kai-jia!"

There was no expression on the old man's face.

Gao Li instead could not help but shouted: "Jin Kai-jia? 'Big god of thunder' Jin Kai-jia?"

Little Wu said, "Right!" He had lightly smiled and continued, "You were not willing to tell me his origin a moment ago, because you also did not know who he was."

Gao Li sighed, painstakingly said with a smile: "I indeed did not know that he is the big god of thunder."

Little Wu said, "Besides Senior Jin, who else in this world can utilize that axe so ingeniously?"

Jin Kai-jia suddenly coldly said to him, "It is only a pity that you are still too young, therefore you have never seen the look of 'the wind god of thunder axe' 20 years ago."

Little Wu said, "But I have heard."

Jin Kai-jia said, "You certainly have heard, everyone has heard."

Although there was no expression on his face, there was some aggression on his talk.

Little Wu lightly said, "But I had never actually expected that the earthshaking, insufferably proud the big god of thunder, could unexpectedly hide here chopping firewood for others!"

This speech was full of thorn and needles.

Jin Kai-jia's face suddenly changed strangely, as if it was suddenly nailed fast by the deep nail. After a very long time, he only said word for word slowly, "That certainly is owed many thanks to your family."

This speech was also full of thorn and needles.

Little Wu said, "You have some fear but you do not expect to see me here unexpectedly."

Jin Kai-jia said, "Indeed I have not!"

Little Wu sneeringly said, "Ten years ago, the big god of thunder was also known as the world's first class wugong hero, today you saw me, why haven't you killed me?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "I will not kill you."

Little Wu said, "Why?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "Because you are my savior's friend!"

Little Wu said, "Who is your savior?"

Gao Li suddenly said, "It's me."

Little Wu was very surprised and said, "You? You have rescued the big god of thunder?"

Gao Li bitterly said with a smile: "I certainly did not know that I had rescued the world first-class martial arts world master!"

Jin Kai-jia coldly said, "At that time I was already not the martial arts world master, how otherwise I could be bullied by several houseboys."

In his indifferent eyes suddenly there was color of anger. After a very long time, only then he continued, "Since Taishan meet, I was internally wounded by your father's hands, I was no longer the martial arts world master."

Little Wu said, "He has broken your 'repeated-layers-of-flying-blood' ('重楼飞血': Chong Lou Fei Xue)?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "No, nobody could break the 'repeated-layers-of-flying-blood'."

Little Wu said, "Although he broke one of your arm, but you still have one arm left."

Jin Kai-jia sneeringly said, " After all you are too young, unexpectedly you do not know that the big god of thunder used the axe on his left hand."

Little Wu was astounded. After a very long time, he suddenly also asked: "You work on the firewood here daily, that is to practice using the axe with the right hand?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "You are not stupid!"

Little Wu said, "How long have you practiced?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "Five years."

Little Wu said, "Now your right hand whether can be similarly adept with the left hand?"

Jin Kai-jia closed his mouth, refused to reply. Nobody could own his wugong's actual situation, not to his own personal enemy.

Gao Li sighed, said, "No wonder you chopped the firewood in winter, chopped firewood in summer too, now I finally have understood!" He turned to Little Wu, had smiled and said, "Now I also finally know who you are."

Little Wu said, "Oh!"

Gao Li said, "You are not surnamed Wu, you are surnamed Qiu, you are called Qiu Feng-wu."

Little Wu had also smiled and said, "I did not expect you to know my name."

Gao Li said, "In the years past, 'Peacock village's old master Qiu had duel at the top of Taishan with first martial arts master the god of thunder, everyone has heard of this duel."

Qiu Feng-wu could not restrain his sigh and said, "That fight may have startled the world but also shaken the spirits and gods."

Gao Li smiled and said, "Therefore the peacock village name, I certainly have also heard."

Qiu Feng-wu was staring at him, said, "Qiu Feng-wu is good, Little Wu is also good, in any case I am your friend."

Gao Li said, "Certainly."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Moreover forever I will be."

He suddenly turned around and asked Jin Kai-jia, said, "but we certainly are not friends, not now, nor later."

Jin Kai-jia said, "Certainly not."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Therefore if you want to revenge from the peacock village, you may attack me if you feel it's necessary."

Jin Kai-jia coldly said, "Why do I have to look for revenge from the peacock village?"

Qiu Feng-wu: "You do not want to retaliate?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "I don't think so."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Why?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "That fight was originally a fair duel, life or death I cannot complain, moreover I only broke an arm!"

He had suddenly sighed deeply and slowly continued, "Old man Qiu originally may want me to do something, as long as I actually have an arm, I certainly won't retaliate, instead I'll repays a debt of gratitude, not revenge."

Qiu Feng-wu looked at him, as if he was very surprised, but also as if he admired him very much, finally giving a long sigh he said, "No wonder my father often said that the big god of thunder is a great man, having won in the victory, being defeated in the defeat, regardless of the outcome, there were not a lot in jiang-hu that can compare."

Jin Kai-jia very coldly said, "Indeed there are not a lot who can compare."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Although my father had won against senior, but big god of thunder actually is the world's best!"

Jin Kai-jia said, "No."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Yes. Because my father certainly had not won by wugong, but with the hidden weapon."

Jin Kai-jia sank his face and said sternly: "Is hidden weapon not part of wugong? Why do you look down upon hidden weapons?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I... ... "

Jin Kai-jia said, "The sword is a weapon, hidden weapon is also a weapon, I used the wind thunder axe, he used the peacock feather, he could avoid my wind thunder axe, I could not avoid his peacock feather, that meant he won. he won fair and square, you cannot deny it."

Qiu Feng-wu hung his head, his face was hidden, he said, "Right, my mistake."

Jin Kai-jia said, "You know that you are wrong, so you can quickly go back."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Now I cannot go back!"

Jin Kai-jia said, "Why not?"

Qiu Feng-wu smiled said with a smile: "Because I must wait to have a drink, Gao Li's celebration drink."

Liquor on the table.

Each person after excited 'ding', seemed to enjoy drinking the liquor from the cups.

Qiu Feng-wu raised his glass and sighed: "A hero is a hero after all, he seems he will not get old forever, I really did not expect the big god of thunder also has the heroic spirit until today, a truly indomitable spirit."

Gao Li said sadly: "But these years, his burden everyday was indeed too painful, I almost never see him smile."

Qiu Feng-wu said with a smile: "But when he thought you must invite him to drink the celebration drink, he has actually smiled."

Gao Li said, "Therefore this celebration drink I must not miss."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I also must drink some."

Gao Li said with a smile: "In the world there are few people who could toast his celebration drink with the big god of thunder and the peacock village's young host?"

Qiu Feng-wu raised his glass and tossed it down, suddenly he slowly put down the wine glass, and said, "I am not the peacock village's young host."

Gao Li said in consternation that, "You are not?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I am not, because I am not worthy." He completely tilted a cup, sighed deeply and said, "I am only worthy as the executioner of an assassin's organization."

Gao Li sighed, said, "I am also really curious how you can enter ' July 15 '?"

Qiu Feng-wu kept staring at the wine glass, he slowly said, "Because I looked down upon the peacock feather, looked down upon the reputation of that hidden weapon. I am not willing to live my whole life under the peacock feather's shadow, like a child who hides under his mother's skirt, he will never become prosperous."

Gao Li said, "Therefore you want to depend on yourself, your own effort, and build your own reputation."

Qiu Feng-wu nodded, painstakingly said with a smile: "Because I discovered in jiang-hu, the respect for the peacock village, is certainly not for us the persons, but for the hidden weapon, if we do not have the peacock feather, our Qiu person is not worth a cent."

Gao Li said, "Nobody thinks like that."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "But I actually have no alternative but to think like that. I joined ' July 15 ', originally so I can thoroughly disintegrate this organization, I continuously waited for the opportunity." He also sighed and said, "But only then I afterwards discovered, that even if can disintegrate ' July 15 ', it still will not be useful!"

Gao Li said, "Why?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Because ' July 15 ' organization itself, is also only a puppet, secretly there is obviously some mysterious formidable body that supports it, directs it."

Gao Li slowly nodded, the complexion also changed a lot and said, "Can't you guess who directs it?"

Qiu Feng-wu vision flashed and said, "You have guessed?"

Gao Li said, "At least I have 70% assurance."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Who is it?"

Gao Li was hesitating, finally slowly he said the three words: "Green Dragon Clan."

Qiu Feng-wu made an effort to pat the table immediately and said, "Good, I also guess for certain that it is the Green Dragon Clan."

Gao Li said, "A year has 365 day."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "The Green Dragon Clan is said to have 365 secret sub-headquarters."

Gao Li said, "From the first day of the first lunar month to the lunar New Year's Eve, is by chance 365 days."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "July 15 is only one of the sub-headquarter."

Two people suddenly did not speak, the complexion was actually heavier. "July 15" organization was strict, the method was sinister, the strength was fearful, their work was very clear. But "July 15" was actually only one of the Green Dragon Clan's 365 sub-headquarters. The Green Dragon Clan's organization was very formidable and fearful, that also could only be left for imagination.

Qiu Feng-wu finally sighed deeply and said, "It is said that the Green Dragon Clan's leader once boasted to a person, so long as the sun's light touches the place, the Green Dragon Clan holds the position of strength."

Gao Li said, "He added that so long as the sea is not dry, the stone does not rot, then the Green Dragon Clan cannot be destroyed."

Qiu Feng-wu clenched both of his fists and said, "It is only a pity that nobody knows who our Green Dragon Clan's leader?"

Gao Li said, "Nobody knows?"

(3)

Shuang Shuang got up very early. Gao Li helped her out of bed, now they were picking flowers on the hillside behind. They certainly must have a lot of things to say. Yesterday evening, they certainly did not have many opportunity to converse.

Qiu Feng-wu stood in the courtyard, enjoying the fresh wind and the sunlight in the early morning in this remote mountain.

He originally wanted to help Jin Kai-jia to make the breakfast, but he had been shooed away.

"Go away, when I work, I do not like anyone else looking at the side." It seemed that this previous master did not like people looking at him handling the spatula, and cooked some scrambled eggs, that was certainly not a happy matter. That could really make some people feel very uncomfortable.

But Jin Kai-jia actually did not have the slightest feeling. "I do these matters, only because I like doing it, works can improve my hand to be more adept." "wugong in the world, as long as you have strong will, regardless of what you do, these may all help support your wugong."

Now Qiu Feng-wu was repeatedly chewing on these words, like someone chewing a Chinese olive. He only realized there were many essences and little things needed to be able to become the martial arts world first masters.

The breakfast was already served on the table, Gao Li came back with Shuang Shuang. Jin Kai-jia started the firewood. Qiu Feng-wu calmly looked from the side, only thought his firewood movement's skill was exquisite.

What was the essence of being a martial arts hero? Some four words were whole devotion, hard working. Actually these four words were also similarly suitable for anything in the world. Regardless of what you were doing, one needs to have whole devotion, hard working.

"You may know who uses the axe first master in the ancient times?"

"No!"

"Lu Ban."

"He was only a clever artistic performer."

"But he used his axe every day, regarding the axe performance and the special tricks, nobody could compare to him, his axe had become a part of his body, the way he used his axe was as fluent and nimble as the way he manipulated his fingers. Expert, skillful. That is also precisely the essence of being a martial arts hero."

Qiu Feng-wu gave a long sigh, he felt that when Jin Kai-jia said these words, that was comparable to enjoying the secrets of wugong moves. These were not

words that were coming from the temple masters who just sat all day long with their thinkings.

The sun shone, the far mountain was green everywhere.

A spontaneous old lady, her left hand was leaning on a walking stick, her right was carrying a covered bundle, was walking on the steps by herself, her waist was bent like a sun-dried shrimp.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Is there anyone else nearby ?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "Recently there are several, near and far."

Qiu Feng-wu no longer asked, the old lady actually walked to the courtyard outside, while panting for breath, she said, "Sirs, do you want to buy some eggs?"

Qiu Feng-wu: "Are the eggs fresh?"

The old lady said with a smile: "Certainly fresh, if you do not believe me you can feel it, it is still hot."

She entered, squatted and untied the black cloth wrapper on the ground. The eggs inside the cloth wrapper were really great and round. The old lady picked them up and said, "The fresh egg can be eaten raw nutritiously, just flush with the boiling water."

Her words were not finished, suddenly with a "whish" sound, a vertical arrow

had penetrated the great-grandmother's back. The old lady's face suddenly was twisted, she gained some ground, as if she wanted to throw forward the eggs in her hand, but she couldn't.

After that, a man in black flew in, in 3-5 jumps, rising and falling, he had flown into the courtyard, without any words, he had taken up the old lady's eggs, and shot them by far, falling into the stream. They heard "bang" sound, and the mountain stream showed four splashes.

The man in black now at last emitted a high whistle and said, "Vicious danger."

Qiu Feng-wu complexion had changed, it seemed that he could not say anything.

The man in black had turned away to him reluctantly. He smiled and said, "What person did your excellency see this old lady as?"

Qiu Feng-wu shook his head.

The man in black lowered his voice and said, "She is a 'July 15' assassin."

Qiu Feng-wu changed color: "July 15? Your excellency, you... ... "

The man in black: "I... ..." His word was just said, his body suddenly became distorted, the face distorted, blood also flowed out from the corners of his mouth. The blood that came out, turned black.

Jin Kai-jia's complexion had also changed, he dropped his axe to catch up

with them.

The man in black had dropped down, his two hands were holding his belly, while struggling he said, "Quick... ... Quick, the antidote is inside a wooden bottle on my body... ... "

Jin Kai-jia wanted to go forward to retrieve it, Qiu Feng-wu had actually held him back.

The man in black's facial expression became more painful, with a choked-up voice: "Please... Quick, quick... ... it will be too late."

Qiu Feng-wu coldly looked at him, he coldly said, "If the antidote is on your body, why don't you retrieve it yourself? "

Jin Kai-jia got angry: "Can't you see that he cannot move, how can we see somebody in danger and do nothing."

Qiu Feng-wu sneeringly said, "He has to continue being stubborn."

A man in black's face was still distorted, but suddenly quick like arrow, he raised his hand and threw out seven stars. That old lady unexpectedly also jumped up from the ground, and as soon as she waved her hand, she had thrown two eggs.

Qiu Feng-wu became aware quickly and he had not fended, instead he had welcomed the moves. Two eggs suddenly arrived in his hand, sliding into his sleeves.

The old lady immediately flew away. Suddenly she discovered that Qiu Feng-wu had already arrived in front of her.

Her fists were launched quickly, but Qiu Feng-wu's palms had actually passed through from her coming fists, before she realized it, Qiu Feng-wu's palms had landed on her chest. With a gentle sound. The old lady was suddenly stuck to this palm, and both of her arms became dangled, the person could not move. Then she heard a bone breaking sound.

Jin Kai-jia pinched that man in black with his single arm, pinched tightly. When he relaxed, the man in black suddenly became like a pile of putties, the broken rib was pierced in a slanted way through his robe. The blood slowly dispersed on the place.

Jin Kai-jia was staring at him, as if he was deeply thinking, that life without blood would never be the same.

The old lady did not stop shivering. Maybe it was because of Qiu Feng-wu's unusual palm strength, or because of that bone disruption sound, she suddenly was afraid, just like a child who was awakened from the nightmare.

Qiu Feng-wu's hand seized forward spontaneously, when he drew back, he had pulled down her facial mask, and revealed another face. Thin and small, waxy yellow, shrinking, but actually extremely young man's face.

Qiu Feng-wu coldly looked at him and said, "You are new?"

This person nodded.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You know who I am?"

This person had wetted his lips and said, "I... ... I have heard."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Then you should know, I at least have 30 methods to make you regret that you have ever been born."

This person reluctantly nodded, his face was already pale.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Therefore you should better say things."

This person: "I will say it... ... I will speak."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "How many people have come?"

This person: "Six."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "What kind of persons?"

This person: "I don't know it, really don't."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Where are they?"

This person: "On that side of the mountain, waiting for us... ... "

His speech was not completed, suddenly he heard a bone disrupting sound. His bone disrupting sound.

Qiu Feng-wu had turned around, and did not look again. When he killed people, he no longer looked at them.

Jin Kai-jia actually was also staring at the blood, he suddenly said, "I have not killed anyone in six years."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Six years is indeed not a short period."

Jin Kai-jia said, "When I was 13 years old, I started to kill people, until today, I only realized now that killing is something that makes you sick."

Qiu Feng-wu sighed and said, "Wait until you have killed a lot more."

Jin Kai-jia suddenly moved forward, staring at him and said, "How did you know they are going to kill you?"

Qiu Feng-wu painstakingly said with a smile: "Only because I have done the same thing before."

Jin Kai-jia also wanted to ask some more, but he had heard Shuang Shuang's voice: "What has happened?" ... Leaning on Gao Li's shoulder, Shuang Shuang stood under the sunlight.

Gao Li's complexion was pale and intense, but Shuang Shuang's face as he was supporting her, was also as bright as the sunlight.

Qiu Feng-wu never thought that she could look so beautiful. World. How come happiness and greater self-confidence could cause a woman to look beautiful?

Qiu Feng-wu did not know how to respond to her, actually he heard Shuang Shuang also asking: "I resembled a moment ago heard that you say about killing people."

Qiu Feng-wu had finally reluctantly smiled and said, "We were telling stories a moment ago."

Charmingly asked Shuang Shuang: "What story? I like listening to stories the most!"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "But this story is actually not pleasant to hear."

Shuang Shuang said, "Why?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Because in this story, some people are killing other people!"

Shuang Shuang's face seemed to cast a shadow, mournfully she said, "Why do some people always have to kill others."

Qiu Feng-wu slowly said, "Perhaps only because if they do not kill people, the others must kill them."

Slowly Shuang Shuang nodded, the look was even more miserable, suddenly she knitted her brows: "Why is there some bloody fishy smell here?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "I have killed a chicken a moment ago."

People who lived in the mountain all raised chickens for themselves. Even the most stupid seller would not want to make a long and wearisome journey, selling eggs to this faraway place.

Also, if someone was hit with a poison, it was impossible for the blood that flow from the corners of the mouth to immediately turn to black.

Moreover, it was impossible that when a poisoned person hit the ground, yet he could still say each word very clearly.

This was certainly not because "July 15"'s murder plan was not thorough. This was only because the planner, had never been to this remote wooded mountain area, only because the person who came, was just a newbie in killing.

But they had more experienced experts. Moreover, they had not been defeated completely. Because there were four more people coming. What was truly fearful was these four people.

(4)

People must eat food, Qiu Feng-wu had indeed eat a lot. After this meal, he didn't know when he could eat again. He also hoped that Gao Li would eat. But Gao Li had looked at Shuang Shuang instead, his eyes were filled with the color of anxiety. He obviously had many things to ask Qiu Feng-wu, but he actually

could not do that in front of Shuang Shuang.

On the dining table only Shuang Shuang was happy. The one who knew a little would have less worry or anxiety, therefore sometimes ignorant could bring happiness.

Suddenly Shuang Shuang said, "Today why don't you drink?"

Qiu Feng-wu reluctantly said with a smile: "Only the genuine drunkard always drink."

Shuang Shuang said, "You are not a genuine drunkard?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Luckily not."

Shuang Shuang hung her head, suddenly gently said, "What if it's celebration drink?"

Qiu Feng-wu's heart seemed to be suddenly pierced by a needle.

The celebration drink, weren't they preparing to drink Gao Li's celebration drink?

He moved closer, and discovered that Gao Li's hand were shivering. His face was already pale like paper. No one had the celebration drink. They did not have anything.

Only blood! Perhaps it's others' blood, perhaps their own blood, the endless flowing blood.

When your hands were immersed in the rank smell of blood, this life would forever sway back and forth in the rank smell of blood.

Qiu Feng-wu was having the soup, he only felt that this soup was also acid and rank, like the blood.

Shuang Shuang's face had exuded red, happy and shy blushing. She was hanging her head, gently said, "A moment ago... ... He said a moment ago with me, he said you all have also known."

Qiu Feng-wu said at a loss that, "We have all known."

Reddened Shuang Shuang, charmingly said, "I thought you certainly can congratulate us!"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Congratulation."

He only felt that his mouth was full of the bitter water, tried to swallow but he couldn't, to spit yet he couldn't. He knew that this was a painful moment.

Shuang Shuang said, "Since we have reasons to celebrate, why don't you drink the liquor?"

Gao Li suddenly stood up and said, "Who said we would not drink, I will take the liquor."

Shuang Shuang charmingly said, "Today I also want to drink, I have never

been so happy."

Gao Li said, "I have also never been so happy."

Although he had stood up, but the body actually resembled very stiff. In the courtyard, the corpses had not been buried, under the sunlight they were gradually withering. The ones who pursued them to kill were already on the way, they could appear at any time.

Her tranquil happy life, he would saw with his own eyes that it would be destroyed, all would possibly be destroyed including their lives. But her life had never been so happy, Gao Li could only feel the ice-cold cheek, the tears along the cheek, had trickled down slowly...

Qiu Feng-wu really could not endure to look at Gao Li's facial expression again, also could not endure to look at Shuang Shuang. After he looked at that fear, he might also cry himself.

Jin Kai-jia had been digging into his meal, after swallowing, he suddenly laid down his chopsticks to stand up and said, "I will go."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Go where?"

Actually he did not need to ask. He certainly knew that Jin Kai-jia must vigorously block these people.

Jin Kai-jia said, "I will go out for a walk."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "We go together."

Shuang Shuang said, "You must go now, but you have not drink the liquor."

Qiu Feng-wu reluctantly said with a smile: "The liquor may wait for us to come back again, we will look for fresh bamboo shoots to burn the chicken."

Gao Li has suddenly smiled, lightly said, "You do not need to go, the bamboo shoots are already inside the courtyard." His sound was very tranquil, a lot more peaceful. Much more peaceful.

Qiu Feng-wu had turned his head, his heart immediately had also sunk.

Four people slowly walked into the courtyard.

(5)

The sunlight was bright, all flowers bloomed together. What a good weather.

The first person slowly entered, looked at four directions and muttered: "A good place, this is a good place."

This person's face was very long, like a horse's face, the face was covered with grains of pea-sized warts, the eyes were covered by big blood vessels. Some people were inborn with bad omens, he was that kind of person!

In the courtyard, there was a tree stump. He slowly sat down, "qiang", he drew

out a heavy crafty sabre (鬼头刀 : gui-tou-dao). He started to use the sabre to maintain his nails. 36 catty heavy crafty sabre, in his hand, it was like a willow tree's leaf.

Gao Li knew him.

His name was Mao Zhan!

In "July 15" organization, he was the one who killed the most.

Each time he killed someone, he became almost crazy, as soon as he saw the blood, he became completely crazy. If he was assigned to Yunnan boundary to kill someone, he would have been involved in the assassination attempt on Baili Zhang-qing.

The second individual slowly entered, also looked at four directions and said, "A good place, a person who can die in this place is really lucky."

This person's face was pale green, nobody could see his flesh, the nose was hooked like a hawk, the eyes were like a 'corpse-eater' vulture.

He hold a mourning door sword (丧门剑), the sword flash also looked like his face, sending out a pale green light.

He looked like he did not have the mettle to fight fiercely, but gloominess could actually be more fearful.

In the courtyard there was a mold tree(?). As soon as he entered, he had lain down under the tree shade, because he always detested the sunlight.

Gao Li did not recognize him, but he actually recognized his sword.

"Soul sword" Ma Feng.

When "July 15" recruited him, they had to spend a lot of money, but he was certainly worth it.

He never not killed people easily, and he seldom kill. But the person he must kill, had all entered the coffin. When he killed people, he never allowed anyone to look beside him, because sometimes everyone thought that his method was too brutal.

"If you kill a person, quickly make him disappear, then no one dared to retaliate against you!"

The third person was somewhat big, and already extremely fat, but his footsteps were very light, lighter than a cat. Gao Li certainly also recognized him. This person was unexpectedly Ding Gan.

He slowly entered, looked at four directions, easily said, "A good place, a really good place, someone can wait for death in this place, he is really lucky."

He also sat down, his hand held a sabre embellished with the beard.

He followed Mao Zhan's sidekick, every action and every movement was unintentionally imitating Mao Zhan. If he mentioned his friend, that would be Mao Zhan.

The fourth looked like a very refined, very friendly person. He had fair and

clear face, neat adornment of the beard. He folded his arms and leisurely walked in.

Not only his face was smiling, the eyes were also smiling. He did not speak, nor did he carry any weapon. He looked like a scholar who made a special visit to his friend.

But when Gao Li and Qiu Feng-wu saw this person, they actually felt a shudder in the air, a chill from the bottom of their heart. This person was actually much more fearful than Mao Zhan, Ma Feng, and Ding Gan.

Because they recognized him. He was "July 15"'s leader, "nether world talented person" Ximen Yu!

Gao Li had been in this organization for already more than three years, but he had actually never seen himself Ximen Yu personally attack anyone.

It was said that when he killed people, it was excruciatingly slow. It was said at one time, he killed a person in two days. When this person died after two days, no one else could recognize who he was before.

But these are certainly just stories, not many people believed it. That's because he was really too refined, who also couldn't recognize him once was individual. But these certainly only are the fables, believed the person are not certainly many. Because he really too refined, too handsome and scholarly, moreover he was gentle and courteous. Such a refined person like him could kill people?

Now he was also smiling, standing in the courtyard and waited, he did not worry, also he did not become impatient even if he had to wait for three days.

But Gao Li and Qiu Feng-wu actually knew that it was time for them to show themselves. They looked at each other.

Qiu Feng-wu quietly pulled out his sword from the wall. Gao Li slowly took up his spears from the corner of a wall.

Suddenly Shuang Shuang said, "There are some people outside who just came, are they friends who you've invited to celebrate?"

Gao Li nipped his tooth and said, "They are not friends!"

Shuang Shuang said, "If not friends, what kind of persons?"

Gao Li said, "Robbers."

She lost her color, as if she would faint. Gao Li in a grieved voiced said: "I will asked the elephan to bring you back to your room so you can rest. "I will expel the robbers very quickly."

Shuang Shuang said, "Really very quick?"

Gao Li said, "Really!"

He was reluctantly enduring patiently, he would not let the tears flow off. He only hoped that this was the last time he deceived her. Perhaps this was really the last time.

(6)

Mao Zhan kept studying his fingernails, Ding Gan was plucking at his beard, Ma Feng lay down under the tree shade, not even lifting his face.

In their eyes, Little Wu and Gao Li were only two dead people.

But Ximen Yu had actually welcomed them, the smiling face was gentle and kind, smilingly he said, "These two days you are tired?"

Qiu Feng-wu also had unexpectedly smiled and said, "Fortunately."

Ximen Yu said, "Yesterday you slept well?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "We returned and slept, we ate very full, too."

Ximen Yu had smiled and said, "A person who can eat and sleep well is his good fortune, previous I give your money, you have spent it?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Some of it."

Ximen Yu said with a smile: "Certainly, I have already heard that Baili Zhang-qing are a very generous person."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Good, he has given us each person 50,000 taels, I could not think that rescuing a person could worth more than murdering someone."

Ximen Yu nodded and said, "This but actually reminds me, I fear that I must change my profession later."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "How about now!"

Ximen Yu smiles was saying, "Now I also want to kill several people for free."

Qiu Feng-wu sighed and said, "I also want to kill this individual for free, but it is a pity that his skin was too thick, I also want to avoid spending my physical strength."

Ximen Yu said, "You mean Ding Gan?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I only feel strange that such thick-skinned person, could have such long beard."

Ximen Yu said, "He is indeed brazen, shameless, moreover he has also killed two partners, you know how I cope with him?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I cannot guess!"

Ximen Yu said, "I prepare to kindly give him 500 taels, because he finally agrees to go back and tell your whereabouts to me." He had smiled and easily said, "You see, my award and punishment is always very fair?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "It's indeed very fair."

Ximen Yu suddenly also sighed and said, "I know that you now accompany me to chat, but it's really waiting for the opportunity to kill me, I throughout felt that you are the one who most understood how to kill a person. Therefore I really pity you!"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "What do you also know?"

Ximen Yu said, "I also know that you certainly will wait for me here."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Why?"

Ximen Yu said, "Because it is not convenient to take a woman to escape, this woman may not like it."

He had suddenly smiled to Gao Li and said, "Is it right?"

Gao Li coldly said, "Rubbish."

Ximen Yu smiled and said, "For a long time I have heard that your wife is an angelic beautiful woman, why don't you let her come out for us to see?"

Gao Li said, "She only sees certain people, not your kind... ... "

His body suddenly became stiff, the sound was immediately hoarse. Because he had heard the sound of Shuang Shuang's footsteps. The struggling Shuang Shuang had walked, sometimes stopping for respite.

Each person's eyes all suddenly opened wide, the picture was like seeing suddenly a person who had three legs.

Mao Zhan suddenly laughed and said, "You can see for yourself, this is Gao Li's woman!"

Ding Gan said loudly with a smile: "This is a woman? This is simply a monster, in every sense of the term, a monster."

Mao Zhan added: "If I have to marry this kind of a monster, I would rather be a monk, I would rather be knocked dead!"

Gao Li's face was twisted with distortion because of the pain. He did not dare to turn his head around to look at Shuang Shuang.

He suddenly felt like a wild animal which was wounded and surrounded.

He'd rather die, rather die 1,000 times, even 10,000, rather than let Shuang Shuang under this kind of attack.

Chapter 4: Destiny

(1)

The skill of sabre wielding, the swordstyle of the famous expert... frequently they could be described as foolishness if one were to pick up dual sabre or dual sword with both hands.

In the eyes of famous experts, dual spears simply could not be compared to the use of one spear. Because in wugong, just like in very many other matters in the world, having more, did not necessarily meant always better.

If some people had seven fingers in one hand, his deftness might not be better than a person with only five fingers. For a truly finely deft person, even if there were only one finger, that would have been enough.

But a person who used dual sabres or dual swords, held on to this belief: "A person obviously always has two hands, then why one would use only a single weapon?"

Regardless of which kind of truth was quite correct, now no one could actually consider Gao Li as laughable. His dual spears looked like poisonous dragon flaps, soaring hawk's wings. He had attacked Ximen Yu, his spears had been launched. The start of the bloody battle had been initiated but Qiu Feng-wu had not moved.

Because Ximen Yu has not moved, he had not even turned his face towards Gao Li. His eyes were always staring at Qiu Feng-wu's hand, the hand that grasped the sword.

Qiu Feng-wu felt himself break a cold sweat.

Ximen Yu had suddenly smiled and said, "If I were you, I would have laid down this sword"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Oh!"

Ximen Yu said, "Because if you lay down this sword, perhaps you still have the opportunity to live and leave here."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "How big is the opportunity?"

Ximen Yu: "Not much, but at least it is still better than none."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Gao Li did not seem to have any opportunity."

Ximen Yu said, "His marksmanship is good, he is a master of the spear wielding skill, he might be the best at it."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You said this very fairly."

Ximen Yu said, "I have looked at his marksmanship, also at how he kill people, in the world certainly there is none compares to me who understands his wugong."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I know you pay a lot of attention to him."

Ximen Yu said, "I also understand Mao Zhan and Ding Gan very well."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You think they are enough to cope with Gao Li."

Ximen Yu said, "At least almost enough."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "How about me?"

Ximen Yu said, "I certainly understand you very well."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You and Ma Feng are enough to cope with me!"

Ximen Yu smiled and said, "I don't like too many people."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You calculated this so you have come forward."

Ximen Yu said, "Based on experience, to be ever-victorious, if one does not have the ninety percent assurance, how can I come here."

Qiu Feng-wu suddenly gave a long sigh of relief, like someone drifting on the sea, a person who was almost drowned, had suddenly discovered the land.

"The ninety percent sure Ximen Yu has miscalculated after all."

He had not calculated Jin Kai-jia. He certainly would never dream, that the big

god of thunder, a master from the years past, was also here.

"Whether a mistake is big or small, it can turn out to be a fatal mistake"

His mistake this time was awfully big.

Qiu Feng-wu slowly nodded and said, "You indeed considered very thoroughly, four people are indeed plenty enough to cope with us two."

Now although they had not seen Jin Kai-jia, but he actually knew that Jin Kai-jia would surely appear at a suitable time. He nearly could not stop himself from smiling.

The dual spears danced in the air. The flashes of the silver light, got reflected on his face, he looked like as if he had never been more relaxed.

Ximen Yu was staring at his face. Suddenly he had smiled and said, "I know that there is another person."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You know?"

Ximen Yu discussed: "Therefore we have come just the four of us."

Qiu Feng-wu sighed and said, "Although I have not seen him, but I finally felt his presence."

Ximen Yu said, "Oh."

The swords and spears danced in the air behind him, they were less than two feet away from him. The sword and the spear clashed, often making a soul-stirring sound, the cold wind from the measured clash could send his long hair to scatter in disorder. But his face never twitched a muscle.

Qiu Feng-wu also had no alternative but to admire him, he had never seen a person so calm. He had also smiled and said, "There is also another person? A person who will set a fire behind?"

Ximen Yu said, "Yes."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "First you set a fire to the house to cut the escape route, and then moved to the front, to circle us."

Ximen Yu said, "You seem to understand me very well."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I pick things up quickly."

Ximen Yu sighed: "Indeed you should be my good helper originally."

His vision suddenly moved aside from Qiu Feng-wu's body, transferring to Shuang Shuang's body. Shuang Shuang stood in the entrance, standing under the glow of sunlight. Her slender emaciated hand was holding the door open, as if she was going out if necessary.

But she had not dropped down. Her body seemed to be completely stiff, her face also held an indescribable expression that although she had not dropped

down, but her entire person had actually seemed to have collapsed completely. You forever could not imagine that there was this kind of posture and expression.

Qiu Feng-wu could not stand turning his head to look at her, he suddenly smiled and said, "The fire is up?"

Ximen Yu said, "No."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Why not?"

Ximen Yu said, "You are worrying for me?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I only fear that he will not set it on fire."

Ximen Yu said, "Why not?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Only one kind of person cannot."

Ximen Yu said, "A dead person."

Qiu Feng-wu smiled.

At this moment, Ximen Yu finally moved, flushed towards Shuang Shuang. Ma Feng who had continuously lay down under the tree had also suddenly moved forward, the glimmer of the sword light flashed, like a jagged thorn around Qiu Feng-wu's neck.

But also at this moment, behind the house, there were the shadows of two people.

"Thud", Ximen Yu had not looked closer at the two people, because he knew that he had miscalculated.

Now his goal was Shuang Shuang. He could also see Gao Li's sentiment towards Shuang Shuang. So long as he could hold Shuang Shuang under duress, even if he could not win these fights, he would still have a way to retreat.

Shuang Shuang had not moved, had not fended against him. But behind her, a person actually appeared. A godly giant.

Jin Kai-jia seemed as if he casually stood in the entrance, as if he was not completely on alert. But anybody could see that to intercept him was not an easy thing.

His face also had no expression, a pair of dead gray open eyes, coldly looked at Ximen Yu, he has not certainly attacked, but Ximen Yu actually suddenly stopped, like he suddenly found an invisible stone wall right in front of him.

This person with a single arm and no expression, was not on alert, but his position already caused Ximen Yu's eye muscles to draw tightly. He was staring at him, word by word said, "Your excellency's surname?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "Jin!"

Ximen Yu said, "Jin, Jin as in 'gold'?"

He suddenly discovered that this single arm person wield the iron axe, his entire body became stiffened.

Big god of thunder Jin Kai-jia said, "You did not expect this?"

Ximen Yu sighed, painstakingly said with a smile: "I have miscalculated, I originally should not come."

Jin Kai-jia said, "But you have come."

Ximen Yu said, Now can I also walk away?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "You cannot. "

Ximen Yu said, "I may give you a hand."

Jin Kai-jia said, "A hand is insufficient."

Ximen Yu said, "What do you also want?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "I want your life."

Ximen Yu said, "No deal?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "No."

Ximen Yu gave along sigh and said, "Good."

He suddenly attacked, his goal was Shuang Shuang. To protect someone else was always more difficult than to protect oneself, perhaps Shuang Shuang was Jin Kai-jia's only weakness, the only opening.

Jin Kai-jia was protecting Shuang Shuang. He knew that the best defense, was to attack.

His iron axe cleaved forward in attack. This axe was simple, pure, steady, the axe was not an ever changing weapon. Iron axe cleaved straight at the enemy, the simplest kind of weapon in wugong skills.

But this move actually had one hundred different follow-up moves, ever changing. This axe had returned to its original stance, very similar. Nobody could describe the strange moves of this axe, nobody could understand it.

Not even Ximen Yu. When he saw the iron axe cleaved down at him, he felt the ice-cold sharp axe chopped down, he felt as if he could hear the sound of his own breaking bone. He nearly could not believe that this was real.

Could death be so unreal? No pain, no fear. He did not earnestly think that he could die this time, but suddenly death had seized his life. Then the limitless darkness had embraced him forever.

Shuang Shuang had not moved, but the teardrops had slowly flowed down her face...

Suddenly, there was also a miserable shout. Qiu Feng-wu had true enlightenment results in Ma Feng's fearful move, Ma Feng had made a fatal mistake. He wielded his sword too high, revealing an empty opening on his abdomen.

Qiu Feng-wu's face had not shown his thought, when the sword tip had pierced his enemy's belly. As soon as Ma Feng felt the sword, he looked like a fish who got hooked. When his body fell down, the blood had fallen on his own body. He also died very quickly.

Mao Zhan had became almost crazy. Because he had smelled the blood fishy smell, he seemed crazed with hunger, like a wild deer who got stuck on an oak tree approaching its death. He could not see the other person, he could only see Gao Li's dancing spear skill.

Ding Gan step by step had moved backward, suddenly he turned around to flee, a good skill too.

Qiu Feng-wu had waited there and coldly looked at him, "You want to leave?"

Ding Gan wetted his dry lips and said, "I have said what I wanted."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You have said that in order to live, you would do anything."

Ding Gan replied: "I have said so.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Now you may do something for me."

Ding Gan's eyes lit up with hope and asked immediately: "What matter?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Is Mao Zhan your good friend?"

Ding Gan replied: "I do not have a friend."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "It is good, you kill him, I will not kill you."

Ding Gan had not said anything, his hand was raised. Three sabre lightning moves were launched, three sabre moves towards Mao Zhan's left chest.

Mao Zhan roared loudly and suddenly turned his head. He could not see Gao Li, he could not see the silver spears that danced in the air. The silver spears was stunned. He stared at Ding Gan and moved forward step by step, the blood on the chest blood did not stop flowing down his body.

Ding Gan's face had lost all his blood, he had moved backward step by step with a malicious voice: "You cannot blame me, even if I accompany you to die, there will be advantage in it."

Mao Zhan clenched his teeth, blood had seeped out of the corners of his mouth.

Ding Gan suddenly sneered and said, "But you also should not think that I fear you, now I can kill you only with only a slight effort." His hand was raised.

Then his complexion sudden became ugly, because he discovered that both of his arms were gripped by a person.

Mao Zhan kept moving forward step by step.

Ding Gan could no longer move, could no longer retreat.

Qiu Feng-wu's hands were like two iron clasps, they had closely gripped his arms.

Ding Gan had a ghastly pale look, with a trembling voice he said: "Let me go, you have promised me, that you will let me leave."

Qiu Feng-wu lightly said, "I do not kill you."

Ding Gan replied: "But he..."

Qiu Feng-wu indifferently said, "If he kills you, that has nothing to do with me."

Ding Gan suddenly gave a loudly miserably shout, he struggled like a wild animal. Then he seemed to stop his breath.

When Mao Zhan arrived in front of him, he slowly drew out a sabre, after slowly piercing the person's chest three times, he also emitted a miserable shout.

Mao Zhan looked at him, before he suddenly turned around, and gave a deep

bow to Qiu Feng-wu. He had not said anything. Then he used his own hand to cut off his own throat.

Nobody moved, no sound at all.

The blood slowly permeated the earth where the sunlight shone, the dead people's corpses seemed to have withered.

Shuang Shuang finally dropped down.

Qiu Feng-wu looked at her, like looking at a fresh flower who had gradually withered ...

(2)

The sunlight shone on the earth.

Jin Kai-jia wielded his iron axe, layer by layer he had chopped. As if he wanted to give vent to the grief and indignation of the heart on the earth.

The earth did not have a word. It could breed life, and it also could similarly accept death.

Fresh flower opened at the same place, as probably where the corpses started to rot.

The grave was dug. Jin Kai-jia had thrown in Ximen Yu's corpse.

A person's joy and hope was not so easy to bury hopefully? He only knew that Shuang Shuang's joy and hope had been buried, now he only saw that it prepared to rot underground.

When you took away a person's life, sometimes you were being kinder than if you took away his hope. He really did not dare to imagine, how a person devoid of hope, could still live, because for himself, although he did not have the joy, he actually still had hope.

Shuang Shuang?

He never bursted into tears, never. But as soon as he remembered about the original Shuang Shuang, full of happiness and self-confidence, his heart seemed to have been pierced by a needle.

Now he only hoped that the two young people could comfort her, could let her live. He was too old. Comforting a woman, actually was a young man's job, an old person has could only excavate the grave for the dead people.

He moved along, bent his waist to retrieve Ma Feng's corpse.

Ma Feng's corpse unexpectedly moved! Ma Feng had not really died. The abdomen was certainly not a person's strategic point, even if the abdomen was pierced, one could still actually survive.

The thought that the abdomen was a critical part, was only an illusion. Ma Feng had used this illusion, and he had intentionally suffered a sword piercing by Qiu Feng-wu.

Jin Kai-jia had just lifted him up when his sword had entered Jin Kai-jia's waist, although it did not enter straight to the hilt.

(3)

The sword was still in Jin Kai-jia's body, Ma Feng actually ran away. He grasped the best opportunity to run away. Because he knew that Gao Li and Qiu Feng-wu certainly would first think of the method rescues Jin Kai-jia first before pursuing him. Therefore he had not wanted Jin Kai-jia to surely die.

When Gao Li and Qiu Feng-wu moved forward, Jin Kai-jia was barely breathing. While panting for breath, he asked hoarsely: "Shuang Shuang?" Even now he still cared for the others.

Gao Li was reluctantly answering him patiently amidst the heart's sorrow and said, "Her body is too weak, and she is not awake yet."

Jin Kai-jia said, "You should let her sleep, when she wakes, just tell her that I have left," he fiercely coughed and said, "You surely do not tell her that I am dead, I surely do not want... ... "

Gao Li said, "You will not die, you cannot die."

Jin Kai-jia had reluctantly smiled and said, "Dying is not a big deal, why do you have to fuss about it, that makes me feel uncomfortable."

Qiu Feng-wu reluctantly had also smiled, he wanted to say several happy words, but he actually could not say anything.

Jin Kai-jia said, "Now that you cannot stay here anymore, the quicker you leave the better."

Qiu Feng-wu said: "Yes."

Jin Kai-jia said, "Gao Li certainly must bring along Shuang Shuang: "

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You should feel relieved, he will not leave Shuang Shuang."

Jin Kai-jia said, "I also hope you comply with my request."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "What matter?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "Go back, I want you to go back."

Qiu Feng-wu nipped his tooth and said, "Why do you want me to go back?"

Jin Kai-jia with respite said, "If you go back, they will not be able to find you again, because who would have thought that you are be the peacock village's young master."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "But... ... "

Jin Kai-jia said, "If they cannot find you, they also cannot find Gao Li, therefore in order to rescue Gao Li, you should go back: "

Qiu Feng-wu was silent momentarily, suddenly he said, "I may bring them back together with me."

Jin Kai-jia said, "You may not."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Why?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "There are many people living in Peacock village, many tongues as well. If they see you bring two people back, sooner or later the news will spread out."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I do not believe that they will really dare to do that in the peacock village."

Jin Kai-jia said, "I know that you do not fear the trouble, but I also know Gao Li's temperament."

He had coughed for a good period of time, only then continued, "He never wants to trouble his friend, if you are really his friend, you should let him bring Shuang Shuang by himself, to go peacefully to their latter half of life."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "But he... ... "

Jin Kai-jia said, "If he really goes to the peacock village, you certainly will regret it."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Why?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "You do not need to ask me why, you certainly will believe me... ... "

He was struggling, his pants for breath seemed to increase very quickly.

After a long time, he said word by word, "If you are not willing to promise me that, I cannot die in peace."

Qiu Feng-wu cupped his hands together and said, "Good, I promise you, but only if you live, so that we can cope with the Green Dragon Clan."

He clenched his teeth and continued, "Only when the Green Dragon Clan is dissolved one day, we can have our lives back."

Jin Kai-jia said, "You can have it one day, but you actually cannot have me."

He had reluctantly smiled, continued, "You should better remember that if you want overthrow the Green Dragon Clan, it is not something that a single person can achieve, not even the peacock feather's master can."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You... ... "

Jin Kai-jia said, "I am no better than you, if you want to overthrow the Green Dragon Clan, you just have to remember five words."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Which five words?"

Jin Kai-jia said, "Work together heart and soul."

"Work together heart and soul!"

With these final five words, this martial arts world giant had finally given his lesson. He came and go freely, roaming through the world, when he arrived at the point of death, what remained was these five words.

By now because he only then truly understood, that there was nothing in the world that could compare with "work together heart and soul".

Now he had said what he must say. He knew that his death was not useless. If you wanted to be useful, that would be difficult, as dying with a purpose was something that did not come easy.

(4)

Dusk.

The setting sun illuminated the room through from the window lighting all the corners.

Two mice came out from the corner hole, swaggering, because they thought in the room there was nobody, but in the room there were some people, three people.

Gao Li and Qiu Feng-wu very straightly stood in front of the bed, looking at Shuang Shuang who was still in deep sleep.

The mouse had fled from their feet, like they had also. They had not moved, nor had they sat down. It was as if they were punishing themselves.

Didn't they create all these misfortunes?

When they saw the soil covered Jin Kai-jia's body, they certainly had not burst into tears, because they had remembered Jin Kai-jia's words. "Death is certainly not a big deal."

Indeed it was not. Because although some people were dead, but their spirits would actually live forever. Living in the hearts of the people! Therefore dying was not painful, only the person who must live who suffered pain.

Now they looked at Shuang Shuang, the tears instead could not bear must come down.

Shuang Shuang had awoken. As soon as she awoke, she immediately summoned Gao Li's name.

Gao Li instantly held her hand, and said with a supple voice: "I am here, I will be here always."

Shuang Shuang said, "I know, I know that you will never leave me behind."

Gao Li said, "I... ... I also want you to understand something."

Shuang Shuang said, "I have already understood."

Her face suddenly revealed the fresh flower smile and continued, "I know that you must tell me, that I am the world's most beautiful woman, cause these people said things to crush my spirit."

Gao Li said, "They were simply not real people and what they said was completely illogical."

Said Shuang Shuang, "I understand."

She lifted up her hand, and lightly caressed Gao Li's face. Her face was filled with gentleness and pity, as she gently continued, "I also know that you are afraid that I should worry, but actually I already know what kind of person I am, I don't need them to tell me."

Gao Li's heart suddenly drew tight, reluctantly said with a smile: "But their words were not real."

Shuang Shuang said with a supple voice: "You think I am still a child? You think what others said to me was just false"

Gao Li only felt that his heart sinking, nearly sinking to the deepest bottom.

Shuang Shuang said, "But you should not be afraid that I would become sad, because you cannot be sad for me. For many years, I have realized that I am just a young blind person who looked like a clown."

Her sound was very tranquil, but her face did not have the slightest sadness or

self-pity.

She gently said, "At the start, I was certainly very uncomfortable, and very sad, but afterwards I also have taken it easy, each person has her own destiny, therefore each person should also accept her destiny, and lives well."

She was lightly caressing Gao Li's face, and said gently, "Although I may looked like a clown for some people, but I certainly will not blame god and man, because I am so much more fortunate than a person of misfortune, not only I have kind parents, moreover I also have you."

Qiu Feng-wu was listening at the side, he had some problem clearing his eyelashes.

When he looked at Shuang Shuang, he no longer felt pity or sympathy, instead he was filled with admiration and respect. He really did not expect that in such a delicate abnormal body, unexpectedly there could be such a strong, great heart.

Gao Li mournfully said, "Since you already knew, why didn't you say anything?"

Shuang Shuang said, "I am anxious for you."

Gao Li said, "For me?"

Shuang Shuang said, "I know that you are good to me, I hope that when you here with me, you can be joyful. But if I said what I knew about me, you might sad and uncomfortable for me." She gently sighed and said, "You are so good to me, how can I let you feel uncomfortable?"

Gao Li looked at her, his tear had came down.

He suddenly discovered that between them, he was the one without the spirit, just a selfish person. He looked after her, protected her, perhaps only to make himself feel joyful, in order to rebuild himself, in order to bring peace to his own mind.

He always hoped to see her smiling face, to wash clean the rank smell of blood from his hands. He continuously avoided people: avoiding others, avoiding himself, avoiding the blame and the conscience. Only with her, he could obtain a moment to rest.

Shuang Shuang said with a supple voice: "Therefore I hope that you are not sad for me, because I never feel sad for myself, so long as we can be joyful together, then we should not care about my appearance at all."

This script was something he should say, instead she said the words. He suddenly detected that for all these years, it was she who were looking after him, protecting him. If he did not have her, perhaps he had already gone crazy, already collapsed.

Continued Shuang Shuang: "Now you understand me?"

Gao Li did not say anything anymore. He had knelt down, sincerely he had knelt down.

Qiu Feng-wu looked at them, the tears had came down copiously. He had suddenly also discovered something.

The god in the sky was always fair. Although Shuang Shuang did not have a beautiful body, actually had given her a beautiful heart.

A new grave.

In fact, it simply did not look like a grave. The soil was packed tightly, moreover they had moved some strip of grasses from nearby to lay on top of it. Now nobody could see that in this piece of land, lay buried this generation's wonderful hero's corpse.

This was Gao Li and Qiu Feng-wu's intention. They did not want anyone else to disturb this hero's soul underground again.

It also did not have a tombstone. The tombstone was in their hearts: "He is not a god, he is a person."

A great person, a great friend. Perhaps his earthshaking wugong could be dismissed from the mind by them, but what he did for them actually was something they would keep in their hearts for the rest of their lives.

When dusk came, they also brought some liquor here.

The whole liquor in the world.

They were drinking this liquor in turn, and whatever left over, got completely sprinkled on Gao Li and Shuang Shuang who were kneeling on the earth.

"This is in our celebration drink. I know that you are eager to drink our celebration drink."

"I certainly will lead her and leave, look after her well, wherever we may go, I will never leave her."

In this period of life, he hoped that she would stay to be his focus, and that they could live well together. Anything else could be surrendered to the protection of the dead, by their honor and sincerity and respect.

Then Shuang Shuang drew back quietly to one side, and let these two people, on the same juncture in life and death, together they had the same enemies and friends up ahead.

The twilight was darker, the crows of the forest wailed in the wind, as if they were sad to live in this world.

Qiu Feng-wu looked at Gao Li. Gao Li looked at Qiu Feng-wu, what else to say to tell what they feel?

After a long time, Qiu Feng-wu had finally reluctantly smiled and said, "Do you know that you are a person who is very lucky!"

Gao Li reluctantly had also smiled and said, "I know."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Now you will go your way and I mine."

Gao Li said, "You have to go back?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I have agreed to his request, I certainly must go back."

Gao Li said, "I understand."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You?"

Gao Li said, "I have also agreed to his request, we certainly can live well."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Where will you go?"

Gao Li said, "The world is so big, we can always have somewhere to go."

Qiu Feng-wu slowly nodded and said, "But regardless of where you are, later you can find me."

Gao Li said, "Certainly."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Bring her along."

Gao Li said, "Certainly."

Qiu Feng-wu suddenly put out his hand, closely gripped Gao Li's hand and said, "I also want you to agree to one thing."

Gao Li said, "Just say it."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "If you have any difficulty later, you must find me."

The dim light of night was coming.

Qiu Feng-wu's shadow stood lonely, and had vanished in the dim light of the night. Gao Li gently supported Shuang Shuang, his heart felt happy, and yet also grieved.

Shuang Shuang said with a supple voice: "You are a person who is very lucky."

Gao Li nodded.

Shuang Shuang said, "Very few people can have such a friend like him."

Gao Li commented back: " Very few people can marry such a wife as you."

He was indeed very happy. He had a good friend, also a good wife. Anyone

would think that was enough. But he did not know why, his heart was unexpectedly filled with sadness and fear, sadness and fear for the future. Because he had not really grasped, whether they could live well afterwards.

Shuang Shuang moved forward, suddenly also said, "You are not afraid?"

Gao Li reluctantly said with a smile: "I am afraid? For what?"

Shuang Shuang said, "Afraid that we cannot live well, afraid that these people might find us again, afraid that we cannot live on the road."

Gao Li was silent. He always understood very well that, that life could be cruel and be a heavy burden.

Shuang Shuang said, "Actually you should not be afraid, a person as long as he has the determination, he will always have the way out."

Gao Li said, "But... ..."

Shuang Shuang had interrupted him, "I am not afraid of hardship, as long as I can be with you in the same place, a little pain will not affect us."

Gao Li said, "But I must look after you well, I want you to have a good life."

Shuang Shuang said, "What kind of day, can be called a good day?"

Gao Li had not replied. He did not know how he should reply.

Shuang Shuang said, "If one can eat well, wear something, have a shelter, and most importantly, have a joyful heart, as long as the heart is joyful, I do not care about anything else."

On her gentle face, there was courage and determination which one could not begin to describe.

Gao Li slowly lift up his chest and pulled up her hand. His heart was also suddenly filled with determination and courage. He knew that there was nothing in the world presently that could make him feel sad with dread.

Because he was no longer lonely. No longer lonely could only be felt by those who was once lonely, only then he realize how marvelous it was not to be lonely.

(5)

They certainly had not been to the remote mountains, also had not been to the bordertowns. They looked for a peaceful village to stay, people in the town were good, simple, and honorable. An industrious tenant farmer, with a feeble wife, would not cause others to gossip here.

On sunrise they work, on sunset they rest.

Their days were tranquil and happy. It was only a pity that this certainly was not our story's conclusion.

Gao Li returned. He was full of soil and wearily came back. With her delicate gentle hand, Shuang Shuang had fried some food for him, had warmed up a pot of liquor.

In this room she had become familiar with everything, she could gradually use her hands to replace the eyes. Now she had become much healthier. Happy joyful life, regardless of any kind of illness, was without a doubt a good medicine.

Gao Li looked at the food and wine on the table, he had smiled like a child: "Tonight unexpectedly we have the liquor."

Shuang Shuang was smiling very sweetly said, "These days you are really too tired, I should really prepare nice things for you to enjoy well."

Gao Li sat down, first he drank some liquor, then he said with a smile: "I only wish today to hand over the rent, and that there would some left to get several buckets of grain, and buy some amusing trinkets for you."

Shuang Shuang behaved like a spoiled child, sat on his knee, winking her eye and said, "I only want the same thing."

Gao Li said, "What do you want?"

Shuang Shuang said, "You."

She used her delicate young hand, and pinched his nose. He opened the mouth, as if he was gasping for breath. She kept laughing, dropping down the glass of liquor, he took up the chopsticks, has pinched a piece of spareribs, must

force it into her mouth.

Suddenly, his chopsticks had fallen down. His hands were already ice-cold. The chopsticks did not pinch the spareribs, but a bug. A seven inch long centipede.

Shuang Shuang said, "What is the matter?"

Gao Li's complexion had also changed, reluctantly said with a smile: "Nothing, there is a bug in the food, I am sure it must have fallen down from the roof, evidently tonight I cannot eat this sweet and sour spareribs."

Shuang Shuang was silent for a very long time, she finally also smiled and said, "Luckily in the kitchen we also have eggs, we will fry some eggs."

As soon as she stood up, Gao Li also stood up immediately and said, "I will go with you."

Shuang Shuang said, "I will go, you just sit here and drink."

Gao Li said, "I must go with you, I like looking at you frying the egg."

Shuang Shuang said with a smile: "What is so attractive about frying the egg?"

Gao Li said with a smile: "I like looking at you."

Although they both were smiling, but their hearts were actually eclipsed by a

shadow.

The kitchen was very clean. You absolutely could not think that a woman like Shuang Shuang could tidy up the kitchen so cleanly. Love was a very marvelous source of strength, it might nearly obtain anything, it might nearly create miracles.

Shuang Shuang entered the kitchen, Gao Li also entered, Shuang Shuang took the eggs, Gao Li also took the eggs with her. He was simply following her everywhere. Shuang Shuang opened the stove, Gao Li had ignited the fire, Shuang Shuang took up the pot, Gao Li had raised the pot cover.

Suddenly, the pot cover had fallen from his hand. His hand grew colder, the heart was also colder. The pot certainly was not empty, there were two paper-cut people. The two people did not have heads, the neck was dyed red by the blood.

The furnace fire was very fiery, the paper-cut people was roasted by the heat, and suddenly started to twist and distort, they look surreptitiously fearsome.

Shuang Shuang's complexion was pale, she almost fainted, as if she had the marvelous sixth sense, and felt Gao Li's fear. She had not fainted, because she knew that they needed to be strong at this time.

She suddenly said: "Now we are back to the old matter?"

Gao Li nodded, he felt the pain.. Because he knew that their tranquil happy life, had now disappeared! Must acknowledge this matter, was indeed really painful.

But Shuang Shuang was instead very calm, she had gotten hold of his hand and said, "We know that sooner or later they will find us, right?"

Gao Li said, "Yes."

Shuang Shuang said, "Therefore you cannot worry for me, because I already had made some preparation." Her sound was gentler, she continued, "I have spent more than two years of happy living, if I die now, there would be no regret, moreover, we may not necessarily die."

Gao Li lifted up his chest and said in a big voice: "You think I am afraid of them?"

Shuang Shuang said, "You certainly are not afraid, you are a man with indomitable spirit, how can you fear these stealthy villains."

Her face was bright, originally full of her pride for him. Gao Li suddenly also had the courage. If you loved well, you would know that this kind of courage would marvelously arise.

Shuang Shuang said, "Now you honestly tell me, actually what was in the pot?"

Gao Li slow said that, "Only... ... Only two paper-cut people."

Shuang Shuang said, "Paper-cut persons?"

Gao Li sneeringly said, "They want to frighten us, actually they do not realize

that we will never be afraid."

The dead bug and the paper-cut persons certainly could not kill anyone, everybody could see that this was only a threat, a kind of warning. They obviously did not want him to die too quickly.

Shuang Shuang nibbled at her lips, after a very long silence, she suddenly said, "You wash the pot, I will boil the egg for you to eat, let's boil six eggs, you eat four, I will eat two."

Gao Li said, "You... ... You can eat?"

Shuang Shuang said, "Why can't I eat? When one cannot eat, that is like saying that one is afraid. Therefore we have to eat, and moreover, we have to eat a lot."

Gao Li said with a smile: "Right, I eat four, you eat two."

Only eating the eggs, was the safest thing. Therefore they started to eat the eggs.

Shuang Shuang said, "These eggs are really delicious."

Gao Li said, "Exactly, more delicious than the spareribs."

Shuang Shuang said, "If they dare to come openly and aboveboard, I will ask them to eat two eggs."

"It's a pity they do not dare, that kind of person only dares to make shameful things stealthily."

Suddenly, outside the window there was a sound of a sneer.

Gao Li suddenly stood up and said, "Who is it?"

No one had responded, certainly no one had.

Gao Li wanted to pursue, actually he slowly sat down, lightly said, "Really shameful."

Shuang Shuang said, "Do you know what is the best method to cope with this kind of person?"

Gao Li said, "What method do you say?"

Shuang Shuang said, "Just pay no attention to them."

Gao Li said with a smile: "Right, just be unalarmed by strange sights, it avoids the feeling of defeat, this is indeed a good method."

He laughed loudly, but he was really laughing?

Outside the window darkness existed, limitless darkness. In darkness did not know how many fearful matters was hiding, how many fearful people?

In the room there were actually only two people. A small room, a young couple, that limitless darkness and fearful things outside, had completely surrounded them.

He was really not afraid?

The silver spear was taken out from under the bed. The spear had accumulated some dust, but actually had not rusted. Some things could never rust, some recollections were also the same.

Gao Li had remembered Qiu Feng-wu. How was he doing now? Were they also looking for him? He hoped they had not.

He hoped this matter would be finished here, would disappear with him. He could not lay down, only Shuang Shuang could. If he were asleep, would Shuang Shuang be able to? He did not want to think about it at all. It seemed that Shuang Shuang had not thought about it, it looked like she could sleep. She really looked like a much stronger, braver person, but when she was asleep, she looked just like a child. How could he be cruel enough to leave her? How could he die?

Outside the window the wind was howling, the night was darker. He gripped his spears tightly, he exhausted all strength not to cry. But he cried.

Shuang Shuang turned around, she suddenly asked: "Why don't you sleep?" Originally she had not been sleeping.

Gao Li said, "I... ... I am not sleepy."

Shuang Shuang said, "Don't forget that you will have to get up early tomorrow and work on the field."

Gao Li had reluctantly smiled and said, "Will I stay home and be lazy tomorrow?"

Shuang Shuang said, "Certainly, but how about the day after tomorrow? Four days from now?" She sighed, continued, "If they do not appear, you will continuously stay with me here? Can you stay with me in this hut for a lifetime?"

Gao Li said, "Why can't I?"

Shuang Shuang said, "Even if you can, how can we survive?"

Gao Li said, "We can keep it up until they appear, we'll wait until they confront me, try them to get the better of me."

Shuang Shuang said, "But when will they confront you?"

Gao Li's affirmation reply, "They have come already, why will they wait?"

Shuang Shuang said, "They do this, perhaps to make you feel surrounded, they wait until you feel exhausted and only then they appear."

Gao Li said bitterly with a smile: "But they do not need to wait, they simply do not have to do that."

Shuang Shuang said, "Why?"

Gao Li however said, "Now is the time to tell the cold truth?"

Shuang Shuang said, "Yes."

Gao Lijie said, "Then I only hope you will do one thing for me."

Shuang Shuang said, "What thing?"

Gao Liqing was caressing her face, with a supple voice: "I want you to comply, regardless of what happens to me, you will take care of yourself."

Shuang Shuang stammered: "You... ... You... ... What do you mean?"

Gao Li mournfully said that, "You know what I mean."

Shuang Shuang said, "You are afraid of them?"

Gao Li said, "I have no alternative but to fear them."

Shuang Shuang said, "Why?"

Gao Li's face twisted because of the pain and said, "You are always afraid, since they are the ones who are looking, they certainly have the upper hand."

Shuang Shuang was silent. As if she suddenly became very calm. After a very long time, only then slowly said, "If they have the upper hand, why wouldn't they start immediately?"

Gao Li said, "Because they intentionally let me suffer."

Shuang Shuang said, " But after they seize you, couldn't they still make you suffer?"

Gao Li was stunned. Then his eyes gradually brightened, suddenly he jumped and said, "I know it."

Shuang Shuang said, "What do you know?"

Gao Li said, "The Green Dragon Clan's persons have not come."

Shuang Shuang said, "Then who comes?"

Gao Li said, "The person who comes is only one person, therefore he only forces me to feel exhausted, to fell like going crazy, and then he slowly tidy me up."

Shuang Shuang said, "You know who this person is?"

Gao Li said, "Ma Feng! Certainly Ma Feng."

Ma Feng only killed a few people. But when he killed people, he never slipped. He killed people very slowly, much slower, because he thinks, "If you kill a person that way, even after he become a ghost, he would never dare to retaliate."

Gao Li's face was flushed with excitement and said, "I know that sooner or later he will come, I know."

Shuang Shuang said, "Why?"

Gao Li said, "He wants to retaliate."

Shuang Shuang said, "Retaliate?"

Gao Li said, "Some people may make a lot of mistakes to you, and we will not make a big deal out of it, but he is not like that, he wants to take his retailiation personally."

He clenched his teeth and said, "He has actually forgotten that I am also looking for him!"

Who could forget that he killed Jin Kai-jia.

Shuang Shuang said, "How do you know that he has not brought the Green Dragon Clan's people with him?"

Gao Li said, "He cannot."

Shuang Shuang said, "Why?"

Gao Li said, "Because the kind of retaliation that he enjoys is killing, and he never wants to share this mission with anyone else."

Shuang Shuang gripped his hand tightly and said, "He... ... He is certainly a very fearful person."

Gao Li sneered while saying, "He is indeed, but I certainly do not fear him."

His voice suddenly stopped, unexpectedly someone was knocking on a door. The knock was very light, very slow on a door. Each knock was like the pounding on their hearts.

Gao Li nearly stopped breathing. He suddenly discovered that he had less assurance than what he imagined. These two years, he toiled with the hoe and not with his spears.

The knocking on the door was also continuing, gently, slowly... ...

Shuang Shuang's hands were very cold. He suddenly discovered that her courage was less than what he imagined, too.

Finally Shuang Shuang could not bear saying, "Outside there seems to be someone knocking on the door."

Gao Li said, "I have heard it."

Shuang Shuang said, "You are not going to the door?"

Gao Li sneeringly said, "If he wants to come in, even if I don't go to the door, he can still come in."

Actually he also knew that this was only an excuse. He was indeed dreading this moment. Because he could not die, therefore he was afraid of death. Fearing death was certainly not an ignominious matter, it was not! If you were a real man, who had a woman like Shuang Shuang who needed you to look after for her, you would also fear death.

Shuang Shuang's heart felt like being pricked. She certainly understood him, nobody could understand him better than her. In her empty gloomy eyes, suddenly tears dropped down like crystal clear teardrops.

Gao Li said, "You... ... You are crying?"

Shuang Shuang nodded and said, "You know I am always proudly of you but..."

Gao Li said, "I know..."

Shuang Shuang said, "But presently, I actually do not have this feeling."

Gao Li hung his head. He certainly also understood Shuang Shuang's feeling. A woman never wanted a coward for her man, nor did she want her man to evade difficulty and danger.

Mournfully Shuang Shuang said, "I know that you want to be here for me, but I actually do not hope that you'd be here, because I know that you must be suffering a lot, because originally you are not a coward."

Gao Li said, "But you... ... "

Shuang Shuang said, "You cannot worry for me, regardless of how I am, you need to do what you should, perhaps otherwise I will suffer more than you."

Gao Li looked at her, only a real woman could say such speech. He suddenly felt that he was very proud of her. He bent down his body, lightly kissed the teardrops on her cheek, then turned around to go out.

She bent down on the pillow, and then she heard the sounds of his footsteps.

Every day in the early morning, she always counted his footsteps, from the bed he would walk 13 steps, to reach the outside door.

One step, two steps... ... four steps, five steps... ...

This time he went out, would he come back? She did not know, also she did not dare to think about it. Even if she was assured that he would never return, he still would not detain him, because this matter needed to be resolved. He could not evade this.

END OF CHAPTER 4

Chapter 5: Old sentiment revisited

(1)

The dim light of night chillily spread out.

The coldness had risen, a person calmly stood in the fog.

A cloudy person, a cloudy face, the eyes were actually penetrating like the hawks circling around the corpse.

As soon as Gao Li opened the door, he saw him. He had not really changed from two years ago.

Gao Li never thought that he could unexpectedly stand outside the door waiting, like a visiting friend waiting for the master of the house to open the door. But his eye looked at Gao Li immediately, actually just like the hawks looking at a corpse.

Gao Li said, "You have come."

Ma Feng said, "Right, I have come, sooner or later I must come, if anyone pierced a sword into my belly, he would never live peacefully."

Gao Li coldly said, "You can come here, but retaliating will not exactly be easy."

Ma Feng said, "It will not be easy indeed, you can never guess how much I have spent to be here, therefore I will not die now."

His pupil was contracting, the eyes were filled with hatred, suddenly he also asked: "Little Wu?"

Gao Li said, "You want me to look for him?"

Ma Feng said, "Very much so."

Gao Li's corners of the mouth seemed to reveal an unusually happy expression, he lightly said, "It's a pity you will never see him."

Ma Feng said, "Why?"

Gao Li said, "Can't you guess?"

Ma Feng changed his countenance and said, "Has he died?"

Gao Li sneeringly said, "If he does not die, how can he let you off."

Ma Feng's face suddenly twisted, like a person who was pierced by a sword on the belly.

Gao Li said, "Although he has died, but I have not."

Ma Feng gave a long sigh and said, "Good, you have not died, luckily you

have not died, these two years, day and night I kept asking the heaven to bless you with a long life."

There were poisonous hate in each of his words, enough to make one feel afraid.

Gao Li detected his own palm were perspiring, therefore immediately said loudly: "You originally should ask that I die quickly, because if I do not die, you must die, now you cannot have it any other way."

Ma Feng sneered.

Gao Li sneered back and said, "In our line of work, we cannot make any mistake, yet you have actually made three mistakes."

Ma Feng lightly said, "I am listening."

Gao Li said, "First, you should not come alone, second, you originally should coerce me with Shuang Shuang, now you actually have missed an opportunity; Third, you should not knock on my door."

Ma Feng nodded and said, "That makes sense."

Gao Li said, "You originally perhaps have the opportunity to plot against me...
..."

Ma Feng has suddenly interrupted him and coldly said, "I do not need to plot against you, also does not need to use your treasured wife to coerce you,

because I can still kill you as well."

Gao Li laughed.

Ma Feng said, "These two years, I train hard six times every day, you?"

Gao Li smiles suddenly stopped.

Ma Feng coldly looked at him, "You are still alive now, because I do not want you to die yet."

Gao Li had not spoken, also had not moved. He suddenly felt very uncomfortable, Ma Feng exuded superior calmness, he suppressed this discomfort.

Ma Feng's threatening vision were aimed at him. He was looking up at the chilly, dark nighttime sky.

After a very long time, he continued, "You have seven days to live." In his sound, he had some strange and fearful self-confidence, like a judge handing out the punishment to the criminal.

Gao Li had laughed, it took a very big effort to force himself to laugh.

Ma Feng had not actually turned around, he easily said, "In seven days, it will be full moon. I like killing people around the full moon period."

Gao Li sneeringly said, "Perhaps you could not wait that long."

Ma Feng lightly said, "Perhaps, but I think you do not need to be anxious to die, you certainly have many things to attend to, your wife also certainly does not want you to die now."

Finally this speech was like a needle, pricking Gao Li suddenly. He sensed his own stomach contracting, like he had vomited.

Ma Feng said, "I may stay here for seven days, this place is at least very clean."

Gao Li said, "What did you say?"

Ma Feng said, "I said in any event, I can wait and live well here for seven days."

Gao Li looked at him. Actually he simply had not smiled, but the face always had the sinister, venomous, filled with self-confident happy expression. This was precisely the kind of strange self-confidence that caused his entire person to become dangerously fearful.

Ma Feng slowly said, "For seven days, the entire seven days and seven nights, you can do many, many things. If you made proper arrangement, even if you die, your wife can be taken care of well."

Gao Li looked down at his own spears. On the spears there was dust, but there were glimmers of brightness. He moved forward, the cold sweats dropped along his cheek. His voice became hoarse, finally he could not bear saying, "You can

wait for seven days, why can't I?"

Ma Feng smiled. This time he really had smiled, while smiling he said, "Very good, I will come again early morning tomorrow, early morning I like eating noodles."

He did not let Gao Li speak again, suddenly he turned around, quickly vanished in the cold fog.

Gao Li did not look at him again, and just turned around, he could not stop bending down and vomit. He did not stop vomiting, until all his bitter water had come out.

Then he felt a pair of ice-cold but small, gentle hands, held and assisted his face. The wet hands, were they from the tears, or the cold sweat?

Also after a very long time, Shuang Shuang said softly: "You did not guess wrong at all."

Gao Li shook his head. He was not wrong, seven days were not too short, that was enough to take care of many things.

He must endure patiently. He could have many chances to defeat the others, but presently he needed to endure patiently.

Shuang Shuang did not have to ask again. So long as he thought was right, she would readily accept. She gently said, "Now you need to go to sleep, early morning tomorrow we will eat some noodles."

Large bowl of salty noodles. The noodles was cold.

Gao Li stared at the noodle on the table with little expression on his face.

Then he saw Ma Feng leisurely entered.

Shuang Shuang said, "Is it Mr. Ma?"

Ma Feng said, "It's me."

Shuang Shuang said, "The noodles is cold, must I heat it up?"

Ma Feng said, "No need."

Shuang Shuang said, "If the noodles is not salty enough, here are some more spice."

Her voice was gentle and kind, like an attentive wife, who was entertaining her husband's friend.

Ma Feng looked at her, after a very long time, he suddenly sighed and said, "Luckily you are not the one I have to kill, you really are a lot calmer than your husband."

Shuang Shuang had smiled, lightly said, "You looked at me as a woman, can I put poison in the noodles?"

Ma Feng just took up the chopsticks, laid down. His penetrating hawks' eyes stared at her for a long time, only then with a low voice: "You cannot."

Shuang Shuang nodded and said, "I certainly cannot."

Ma Feng no longer said anything, suddenly he had stood up, walked into the kitchen.

Smiles Shuang Shuang said, "What are you doing in the kitchen?"

Ma Feng coldly said, "When I kill people I like doing the killing myself, when I eat the noodles, I also like to boil it myself."

In the guest room there was some periodic heaving sound, Ma Feng unexpectedly resembled to have fallen asleep.

Gao Li did not sleep.

His face was filled with pain, his heart was very contradictory, as if he wanted to go and do something, and yet he did not know whether he should. He suddenly discovered that he did not have any confidence. Now at last that was truly fearful.

Ma Feng did such thing, perhaps because he must thoroughly destroy his confidence.

Shuang Shuang with a supple voice: "What are you thinking?"

Gao Li said, "Nothing."

Shuang Shuang said, "I suddenly have actually thought of something."

Gao Li said, "Oh?"

Shuang Shuang said, "" He wants to wait seven days, perhaps only because he is still not sure of winning you."

Gao Li said, "Perhaps." He acknowledged it because he did not want to dispute it.

Now Ma Feng was certainly stronger than him, because he knew, that the burden in his heart was heavy. That was what he contended with, a person who did not want to die.

Shuang Shuang said, "I knew he came in here to live, only to make you suffer, but I cannot let him have the day."

Gao Li had reluctantly smiled and said, "You indeed sparred words a moment ago for me."

Shuang Shuang said, "Regardless of what I do to him, he can't retaliate." Her voice seemed to have changed, like breathing heavier, only then she continued, "Because if you do not have me, you simply cannot fear him, right?"

Gao Li was staring at her, suddenly he grasped her shoulder, with a trembling voice: "You... ... What are you thinking?" He asked this speech, only because he suddenly thought of a very fearful matter.

Shuang Shuang had smiled, smiles like a child, and reasoned: "I have no thought at all."

Gao Li said, "I know that you are thinking something in your heart." His voice gradually grew more rapid, continued, "If you think after you die, I may gain freedom to cope with him, to kill him, you are completely mistakenly, moreover you are never more wrong."

Shuang Shuang said, "I... ... "

Gao Li had interrupted her, "If you die, I certainly will no longer want to live. I pledge, as soon as you die, I will accompany you to die immediately."

Shuang Shuang nibbled at her lips, suddenly she threw herself at his bosom, she could no longer speak in pain.

She was an individual after all, a woman. Although she looked strong, but she actually knew about sadness and fear in her heart. She had planned to die for him. She hoped he could gain strength in his grief and indignation.

She found that she could not do so, only because she loved him too much, really could not endure to leave him. Nobody could understand how deep was their sentiment for each other.

Gao Li continued to caress her and said, "For me, you hope I can live, for you, I certainly will go... ... I will have a method to live." He said this very lightly, because he said this while listening to it himself.

Shuang Shuang's weeping sound suddenly stopped, she had guessed correctly what he was thinking.

Then she moved closer and whispered in his ear gently: "You go."

Gao Li had gotten hold of her hand, he didn't say anything.

Now regardless of the how fearful pain and suffering, they could endure it all, endure it together. Because in their heart they have hope.

A beautiful hope.

(2)

Peacock feather.

There was certainly no other hidden weapon in the world that was more fearful than the peacock feather, and yet, there was certainly no other hidden weapon that was more beautiful than it. Nobody could describe its beauty, and nobody could avoid it or resist it.

Even Jin Kai-jia could not. Until his death, he could never forget the flash that this hidden weapon was launched, the mysterious magnificent captivating beauty. In that flash, he unexpectedly became completely dizzy. Then he actually

lost.

The peacock village was also beautiful, as beautiful as the castles in the fairy tales. Under the blue green tiles, the sun in the fall was reflected as the light green light, the white stone steps winded in between the golden tall wall, the entire place seemed to be made completely of gold and jewels.

The garden was full of peach trees, several peacocks were auspiciously wandering around, some ducks floated on the pond. The flowers were red, white, purple, all rainbow colors filled the house, embellished the whole place even more beautiful than dreamland.

Several young girls in colorful clothing walked very quietly across the soft meadow, vanishing beyond the flower beds. In the distant, some chrysanthemums bloomed, sending delicate fragrance for all the people.

There was someone playing the flute in pavilion, only this melodious sound was heard across the calm in all direction.

The front door was open. Gao Li stopped at the top of the steps but he looked ahead inside the house, then. There was some burnt offering, the fragrance was simple and elegant.

Outside the window the twilight had become darker.

Gao Li looked around, he saw some flowers on the table, and saw a person smiling at him. An almost complete stranger.

He seemed young, but his lips were trimmed very neatly, with the very

luminous small beard, complete with a thumb-sized pearl decoration. His clothes were very casual, but the material was expensive, he wore purple satin robe, with white jade belt. Anyone could see that he was a person of great importance, of great authority.

This kind of person and Gao Li seemed to live in two different worlds, only when his sharp eyes looked penetratingly at Gao Li that he suddenly remembered this pair of eyes, he nearly could not bear calling him out immediately.

Qiu Feng-wu.

He really could not believe that this stylish, mature gentleman was a youth who had risked his life with him in the former days. But he actually had no alternative but to believe it. Because the person had met him, gripped his hands, and the bright eyes were filled with hot tears.

Gao Li gave a long sigh and said, "It's you, I finally found you."

Qiu Feng-wu's hands had grasped him tightly and said, "You have finally come, you have not forgotten me."

Gao Li was struggling to stand.

Qiu Feng-wu had actually gripped both of his shoulders and said, "You are not sick, but you are too tired, it's better to lie down."

Gao Li was indeed too tired.

These two days that he traveled, he nearly did not stop even for a moment. He must be back before the full moon arrived.

He saw the sky outside, he jumped up and shouted: "How long have I slept?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Briefly, just momentarily."

He looked how Gao Lie was drenched with cold sweat, he involuntarily showed the wrinkled brow and said, "You seem to have something urgent?"

Gao Li clenched his fists, however he said, "I originally did not want to come here, but I have to."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You ought to remember that I have said, if you have any difficulty, you should find me first."

Gao Li slowly nodded, he nearly could not withhold his tears. A person, who was facing a great adversity, but knew that he had a friend to rely on, that kind of feeling certainly could not be replaced by anything in this world.

Qiu Feng-wu was staring at him, slowly he said, "Had they found you?"

Gao Li nodded again.

Qiu Feng-wu's face seemed to stiffen, he slowly retreated a couple of steps.

Gao Li finally sat down slowly and said, "Only one person came."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Who?"

Gao Li said, "Ma Feng."

Qiu Feng-wu gave a sigh of relief and said, "You have killed him?"

Gao Li hung his head and said, "For all these two years, I have taken the hoe, I have gradually felt that doing farm works is a lot more joyful than killing."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Therefore you no longer want to kill?"

Gao Liku said with a smile: "Yes, but also my killing skill has withered away."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You are afraid that you are not his match now?"

Gao Li said, "Indeed I do not have the assurance."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Therefore he is still alive."

Gao Li said, "Yes."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "And where is he now?"

Gao Li said, "In my house."

Qiu Feng-wu was stunned, he really did not understand, after a very long time, only then he could asked: "Shuang Shuang?"

Gao Li said, "She's there."

Qiu Feng-wu's face changed color and said, "You let Shuang Shuang stay there, and you come here by yourself?"

Gao Li's face revealed his pain and said, "Because he thought that I am no longer capable of killing, therefore I can come here."

Qiu Feng-wu gave a long sigh and said, "I would never guess."

Gao Li said, "So long as I can be back before the full moon, Shuang Shuang will not be in danger."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Why?"

Gao Li said, "Because we agree to fight at the eve of the full moon."

Qiu Feng-wu was pondering, after a very long time, he had suddenly smiled and said, "I have understood now."

Gao Li said, "What?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "He is just a person?"

Gao Li said, "Yes."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "He was not sure he could kill you, therefore he had intentionally let you wait several days, because he saw that you don't have the confidence too. He wants you to suffer in as many days as possible, so by the time you fight, you are ready to collapse."

Gao Li said bitterly with a smile: "Perhaps he only wants me to die slowly, when he kills people he never does it very quickly."

Qiu Feng-wu looked at him, suddenly he discovered that this person had changed, changed quite a bit. He was originally the most callous, the strongest person in the organization, but now he unexpectedly had become completely like an old man.

Was this because he had found true feelings? In this line of work, were people not supposed to get easily excited, and therefore, the more callous person, were the one who lived longer? Because emotion could really be perceived as weakness.

Gao Li suddenly also said, "But he miscalculates one thing after all."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Oh."

Gao Li said, "He thinks Little Wu has died, he also could not think that I still

have a friend."

People in this line of work, originally should not have a friend, could not have a friend, but also must not have a friend.

Qiu Feng-wu pondered for a very long time, only then he slowly said, "You also made a mistake."

Gao Li said, "Oh? "

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You should not let Shuang Shuang stay there, you originally should ask Shuang Shuang to look for me."

Gao Li said, "Because Shuang Shuang is there, therefore I am worried, else how will he let Shuang Shuang leave?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Perhaps he is not willing, but he actually may use Shuang Shuang to coerce you."

Gao Li said, "He had the opportunity before, but he actually did not do this."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "That's probably because at that time he has not seen your sentiment to Shuang Shuang." He stared once more at Gao Li and word-by-word he said, "I ask you, if you go back, if he has the sword around Shuang Shuang's neck, threatens Shuang Shuang's life as an exchange for your life, how will you manage?"

Gao Li suddenly felt his whole body become ice-cold.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You know perfectly well that if you die, Shuang Shuang cannot survive, he know that you surely cannot endure looking at Shuang Shuang dying in front of you, aren't you?"

Gao Li could not say anything, falling down on the bed, cold sweat had poured down like rain. He suddenly detected that in these two years, Qiu Feng-wu had not only become more mature, he was also more thorough, faintly he had the impression of a royal bearing, complete with the impressive and dignified manner. But he had also changed into more callous without a doubt.

He could become like that, but wasn't that what precisely Gao Li had lost? But in each of them, actually who was happier? Being happy or being unlucky, was not absolute. If you wanted to obtain something in one aspect, you must give up something on the other aspect, otherwise life became too boring.

Thinking of this, Gao Li suddenly said, "If I do not let him have the opportunity to put the sword on Shuang Shuang's neck?"

Qiu Feng-wu had smiled and said, "This speech actually makes sense."

Gao Li said, "I know that you are now already the peacock village master."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "My father had already departed."

Gao Li said, "Therefore I want to request something."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You say it."

Gao Li said, "You may refuse, I will not blame you."

Qiu Feng-wu was listening, suddenly the expression on his face changed strangely, as if he could guess Gao Li's request.

Gao Li said, "I must borrow your peacock feather."

Qiu Feng-wu did not speak again, had not said anything, but only looked at his own hand.

Gao Li did not open his mouth again, but he also was looking at Qiu Feng-wu's hand. Both hands were also trimmed very cleanly, maintained very well. These both hands were no longer the hands, who in the former days were filled with dirt.

The person? Was he the same person who gave his life for his friend in the former days?

Outside the window, the dim light of night gradually became darker.

Qiu Feng-wu calmly sat in the darkness, not moved at all including his fingertips. Gao Li could not see the expression on his face.

The wind was blowing outside, in the courtyard sometimes something fell down. The fall season had gradually advanced. The crescent moon was hanging on the treetop.

Qiu Feng-wu still had not spoken, nor moved. Gao Li also no longer said anything, he slowly sat down, found the shoes under the bed. Qiu Feng-wu had not moved forward. Gao Li put on the shoes, he slowly walked away from him and quietly had opened the door.

Outside the door, the night was fresh like water. His heart was very cold, but he certainly had not felt remorse against Qiu Feng-wu. He knew that he had indeed requested too much.

He had not turned his head around to look at Qiu Feng-wu, because he was not willing to let Qiu Feng-wu become uncomfortable. He quietly went out, walked on the courtyard. He picked up a fallen leaf, looked at it, and also gently laid it down.

Then he felt a hand holding his shoulder tightly. A strong and stable hand. A friend's hand.

He had gripped this hand, and looked behind at Qiu Feng-wu, in his eyes suddenly there seemed to be flowing tears.

He had truly requested a lot. But to a sincere friend, regardless of any type of request, it still would not be too much.

----- (previous translation mark) -----

(3)

No one said anything, no sound at all.

All noises outside the three feet thick wall had been all isolated. They had walked very far, and yet they had not walked halfway there.

Gao Li did not remember how many turns they had, how many stone steps, how many iron doors they had passed? He felt that he had suddenly walked into an ancient king's mausoleum, gloomy, damped, mysterious.

Finally a large leafed door was ahead, unexpectedly it was made of three feet thick copper plate, extremely heavy.

The door had 13 locks. Qiu Feng-wu clapped his hands, without saying anything, suddenly there appeared 12 individual. Mostly they were old persons, even the youngest was already 50 years old. Each person's manner was all serious, their footsteps were all very light and steady.

Regardless of their own appearances, these 12 people certainly did not have a single leader. Each person took out a key from his body, and opened the lock together. The key was shackled on the body.

The final key was on Qiu Feng-wu's body. Gao Li was looking at him opening the last lock, and when he turned his head again, that 12 individuals had suddenly vanished.

Were they real persons, or the special guards from the underground world that came out to guard the place, the spirits?

The door opened.

He didn't know how Qiu Feng-wu opened the heavy door, but he seemed to touch something the heavy metal door slid open like a miracle.

A gloomy chill in the air, caressed the face. Inside the door was a spacious stone room, the wall was covered with the moss, six large oil lamps were burning day and night before a Buddha statue.

The light was also gloomy, just like jack-o'-lanterns. Inside the stone room were all kinds of weapon, all kinds of strange foreign-looking sharp weapons, some Gao Li had never seen.

Qiu Feng-wu shoved open a big stone, inside the cliff was unexpectedly hiding an iron cabinet. The peacock feather must be inside this iron cabinet.

Until now, Gao Li had truly understood how precious was his request. If they were not best friends, his request was indeed too much.

Qiu Feng-wu had turned open the iron cabinet, he slowly took out a glittering cylinder. The cylinder seemed very smooth, looked like it was even ordinary, but it was covered in pure gold casting.

A mysterious matter often looked ordinary, but because of it, it could maintain its mysteriousness.

Qiu Feng-wu was holding it with his two hands and delivered it to Gao Li. His face had become very, very serious, so serious that it might approach sombreness.

Gao Li looked at him, looked at the peacock feather in his hand, his heart

suddenly felt an extremely painful feeling. Besides themselves, nobody could understand how this kind of feeling could come.

After a very long time, Gao Li gave a long sigh and said, "You do not need to give this to me."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I have lent you this."

Gao Li said, "I... ... I certainly will return this very quickly."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I believe you."

Gao Li finally took the peacock feather. His fingertips finally touched this mysterious hidden weapon. In this flash, in his heart suddenly gushed out an indescribable mysterious feeling. That feeling like a mortal suddenly able to touch some kind of Devil's incantation, he also felt that he had obtained a mystical charm within him.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "There are two key positions above."

Gao Li said, "I can see."

Qiu Feng-wu continued, "Press one of them, the machinery has started, press down the second button, nobody in the world can rescue Ma Feng."

Gao Li gave out a long toot sound, as if he already could see Ma Feng dropping down before him.

Qiu Feng-wu was still silent for a very long time before he slowly said, "I originally should go together to accompany you. If I go with you, perhaps we do not need this peacock feather."

Gao Li said, "I... ... I... ... "

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I understand what you mean, you are not willing to let my hand be tainted with the rank smell of blood again, you also do not want to trouble me again."

Gao Li sighed and said, "This is because your status now is very different."

Qiu Feng-wu slowly nodded, suddenly said with a smile: "I have something I forgot to tell you, I have a son."

Gao Li had pumped his hand and said, "Next time I come, I must certainly have a look at him."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You certainly must have a look at him."

Gao Li said, "I agree."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I also want you to agree on one thing."

Gao Li said, "You say it."

Qiu Feng-wu's manner became very serious, he slowly said, "The peacock

feather is certainly not a killer's hidden weapon."

Gao Li said in consternation, "It is not?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "It's not! A hidden weapon is also a kind of weapon, where the weapon's true significance is not to kill someone else, but to prevent oneself from being killed!"

Gao Li nodded. Actually he could not truly understand Qiu Feng-wu's meaning, he suddenly discovered that his own thought and Qiu Feng-wu's had some gap. But he was not willing to acknowledge it.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "In other words, the main goal of the peacock feather is not to kill someone else with it, but to save one's life, therefore... ... " He gripped tightly Gao Li's hand and slowly continued, "Therefore I want you to promise me, think ten thousand times before using it."

Gao Li gave out a long sound, but now he had finally completely understood Qiu Feng-wu's meaning. At least he thought he already completely understood.

He got hold of Qiu Feng-wu's hand, word by word he said, "I promise you to think ten thousand times first before using it!"

Gao Li lifted up his chest higher and walked. His footsteps already became far lighter, because in his heart he no longer had the anxiety and fear.

Now he already had the peacock feather in his hand. Now, Ma Feng's life was beyond a doubt, already within the pinch of his fingers. He had no cause to worry, the person who should worry now, was Ma Feng.

(4)

In each room, the most comfortable chair usually belonged to the master of the place. This room's master was Gao Li.

However at this moment, the one who sat on the most comfortable chair, was actually Ma Feng. He used the most comfortable sitting posture, and looked at standing Shuang Shuang opposite of him.

He coldly said, "Five days, your husband had left for five days."

Shuang Shuang nodded.

Her standing posture was certainly uncomfortable. Any standing posture could never be more comfortable than sitting.

Ma Feng was staring at her, also asked: "You do not know where he has gone to?"

Shuang Shuang said, " I do not know."

Ma Feng said, "Will he come back?"

Shuang Shuang said, "I do not know."

Ma Feng in severe voice: "You don't know anything?"

Shuang Shuang said, " I do not know anything."

Ma Feng said, "You have not asked him?"

Shuang Shuang said, "No."

Ma Feng said, "But you are his wife."

Shuang Shuang observed, "Because I am his wife, therefore I have not asked him."

Ma Feng said, "Why?"

Shuang Shuang said, "What man hates the most is a woman who talks too much, If I ask too many things, perhaps he already does not want me."

Ma Feng clenched his fists, his face appeared disturbed and angry. He had asked the same questions for so many times. He was waiting for this woman to become weary, so in her collapse, he would tell the truth. He did not have use violence, only because he feared that this woman would not be able to bear it. He also understood that if this woman died, he invited hundred evil spirits to himself, and yet he still would not get any advantage.

Now he suddenly detected that the one who felt weary was certainly not this woman, but he himself. He could not find out where was the source of this abnormal disabled woman's strength, that she could sustain herself.

Suddenly Shuang Shuang asked in reply: "What are you worrying? Worried that he looks for a helper?"

Ma Feng sneered and said, "He will not find a helper, he is just like me, our kind of person, will never have a friend."

Shuang Shuang lightly said, "Then what do you have to worry about?"

Ma Feng had not replied.

He prescribed his own story-telling script. Gao Li was already like a threatened wild animal at his end's wit, just waiting for someone else to butcher. He did not know why he had to worry.

After a very long time, he coldly said, "Nonetheless, he must come back in any case."

Shuang Shuang said, "You are comforting yourself?"

Ma Feng said, "Oh." Ma Feng also said that, "If he does not come back, you cannot be stubborn anymore."

Sighed Shuang Shuang, said, "I know."

Ma Feng said, "He certainly cannot drop out on you."

Shuang Shuang said, "That is but actually uncertain."

Ma Feng said, "Uncertain?"

Sighed Shuang Shuang, painstakingly said with a smile: "You also should be able to see, I am certainly not a woman who attracts men."

Ma Feng's face changed color and said, "But he is always good to you."

Shuang Shuang said, "He is indeed good to me, therefore if he drops out on me, I cannot blame him." Her face expression seemed very miserable, very sorrowful. Slowly she continued, "He will calculate things to face you, certainly not to save me."

Ma Feng said, "To face me?"

Shuang Shuang word by word said, "In order to kill you!"

Ma Feng's hands suddenly stiffened. After a very long time, he sneeringly said, "You are worried that I will use you to coerce him, therefore you intentionally say these things."

Shuang Shuang said, "You will use me to coerce him?"

She had suddenly smiled, smiled very miserably, she continued, "What kind of person he is, you should be clearer than me, you are like him, can you imagine devoting yourself to such a woman like me?"

Ma Feng's complexion had changed, he coldly said with a smile: "He is not like me."

Shuang Shuang said, "You think that he is really good to me?"

Ma Feng said, "I can see that."

Sighs Shuang Shuang: "Perhaps that is only because he intentionally wants you to observe it."

Ma Feng said, "Why?"

Shuang Shuang said, "He intentionally wants you to think that he is good to me, he intentionally wants you to think that he cannot drop out on me. Only when you think you can ignore him, then he can seize the opportunity to sneak off."

Her face revealed the color of hatred, she clenched her teeth and said, "If he is really good to me, I can feel relieved."

Ma Feng was stunned, he felt his heart slowly sinking.

Suddenly Shuang Shuang also said, "But he can come back, because although you might not kill him, he also must kill you."

Ma Feng hand suddenly gripped his sword.

By now, he also heard a person's footsteps. The sound of the footsteps was light and steady. Anybody could hear that the walking person's mood and spirit were happy.

Even if they could not hear it, they could see it now. Because Gao Li had strode in, his eyes were twinkling, he appeared full of indescribable energy. His spirit was indeed good.

These two days he came back, he continuously slept well and very comfortable, in his heart there was also no fear.

Ma Feng suddenly felt that this chair was very uncomfortable, the sitting posture was also very uncomfortable.

Gao Li simply had not looked at him, as if he did not exist in that room.

Shuang Shuang could certainly tell whose footsteps were those, her face lighted up with smile immediately, saying in a supple voice: "You come back?"

Gao Li said, "I have come back."

Shuang Shuang said, "What do you want to eat for dinner?"

Gao Li said, "Anything, I am starving."

Shuang Shuang had smiled, said, "We seemed to have little meat, how about I cook some for you?"

Gao Li said, "That's good, just fry it with some garlic powder."

Looking at his appearance, it was as if he just went out for a stroll, although

he was tired from the walk, but as soon as he arrived at his home, he had become very happy and relaxed.

Ma Feng was staring at him, as if he had not seen this person. Gao Li had indeed resembled a different person. He was originally like a wild animal already cornered into a hopeless situation, but presently, he actually looked like a hunter ready to pounce on the wild animal. Moreover, he seemed like an experienced hunter, filled with determination and self-confidence.

What strength caused him to change? Ma Feng could not think through. His heart suddenly grew some seeds of unspeakable fear. An unexplainable, baffling matter would always frighten some people.

Shuang Shuang had advanced past him, leaving the kitchen. He had not stopped her. He originally planned to use her to coerce Gao Li, but presently he did not know why, but he suddenly thought that this idea was very weak, very laughable.

From the kitchen the fragrance of meat sauteed with garlic fluttered in the air.

Gao Li had suddenly smiled and said, "She is really a woman who can cook very well."

Ma Feng nodded.

He was not versed in the mundane worldly affairs, therefore he could only nod.

Gao Li said, "She is also very forgiving towards her husband."

Ma Feng said, "She is not stupid."

This point could not be denied.

Gao Li smilingly said, "A man can marry such wife, he is really lucky."

Ma Feng said, "Actually what do you want to say?"

Gao Li slowly replied: "I mean, if you had coerced me a moment ago with her, even if you wanted me to cut my head, I would have given you."

Ma Feng's corners of the mouth suddenly twitched, like someone had pinched that part, and distorted his mouth.

Gao Li lightly said that, "It's a pity, now you no longer have the opportunity." He sank his face, and slowly continued, "Because now, with the slightest move, I will kill you. Killing someone may not necessarily wait until the full moon."

His voice was firm and stable, like a confident judge deciding that the accused was condemned to death.

Ma Feng smiled. He was indeed smiling, but he felt his smile was forced.

Gao Li said, "You may smile now, because I may let you live until the full moon, but when you die in the fight, that's not laughable."

Ma Feng sneeringly said, "Therefore you are not smiling?"

Gao Li said, "I cannot smile, only because killing people is not laughable."

Ma Feng said, "What will you use to kill people? With your broken hoe?"

Gao Li said, "Even if I use that broken hoe, I will still be able to kill you!"

Ma Feng's face stopped smiling. He was breathing very hard.

In the kitchen, Shuang Shuang's voice was heard, "The food is cold now, how about some fried rice with egg?"

"Good."

"Several bowls?"

"Two bowls, one bowl for each of us."

"The visitor?"

"You do not need to prepare for him, he certainly cannot eat."

Ma Feng indeed could not eat. He felt his stomach contracting, it was almost like he had to vomit.

Gao Li had smiled cruelly to him, "You want to vomit a little now?"

Ma Feng said, "Why do I want to vomit?"

Gao Li said, "When a person is afraid, he usually cannot stop vomitting, I have also had this kind of experience."

Ma Feng sneeringly said, "Do you think I fear you?"

Gao Li said, "You certainly fear me, because you certainly can see, that I can kill you whenever I need to." He suddenly continued, "You are now alive, only because I do not want to kill you now."

This speech graated on Ma Feng's ears, because this was originally what he said.

Gao Li coldly said, "Now I do not want to kill you, because I never like to kill people while hungry."

Ma Feng was staring at him, suddenly with a quick jump, the sword pierced forward. This sword move was quick and ruthless. This was precise, accurate and fatal sword stroke, but actually this was not the usual sword stroke that he usually used. This violated the principle he had when he killed people. He killed people always very slowly. This sword stroke was not slow, the sword flashed like a flash, piercing towards Gao Li's throat.

Gao Li sat behind the table, his hands were under the table. He sat unmoving. But his spear suddenly broke through the table. The sword point was still three inches away from his throat. He had not moved. His spear had gone through Ma Feng's abdomen.

Ma Feng was moving. His entire body was slowly contracting, withering away. He looked at Gao Li, his eyes were filled with surprise, fear and doubt. While panting for breath, he said, "You... ... You have really killed me."

Gao Li said, "I have said it, I must kill you."

Ma Feng said, "You originally absolutely could not kill me."

Gao Li said, "But now I have killed you."

Ma Feng said, "I... ... I do not believe it."

Gao Li said, "You must believe it."

Ma Feng seemed as if he wanted to say some more, but his throat's muscle had stiffened.

Gao Li said, "I originally did not have the assurance, but presently, I can kill you again if necessary."

Ma Feng's throat did not stop croaking, as if asking, "Why?"

Gao Li slowly said, "Because I have a friend, a good friend."

Ma Feng's pupil had suddenly dispersed, he finally gave a long sigh. Then he was like a shrunken ball, suddenly collapsed and withered. He did not have a friend, he did not have anything.

(5)

Gao Li opened wide his arms, welcoming Shuang Shuang to his bosom. They mutually hugged each other, all disasters and the unfortunates were all already in the past.

After such test, their emotions towards each other had no doubt become deeper, more sincere. They had completely become dependent on each other, trusted each other mutually.

There was nothing in the world that could separate them again.

But, it was a pity that this was our story's conclusion. In fact, this story had only started now....

(END OF CHAPTER 5)

Chapter 6: Not the right result

(1)

There were many things in this world that people might think were impossible, but they had occurred. Moreover they happened to you!

But when that happened to you, you might discover it only too late.

The night had become darker.

They had not lighted the lamp, calmly hugging in the darkness. What was more happier in the world than hugging your sweetheart in the darkness?

Their happiness was only truly beginning.

It was a pity that the beginning could also mark the end.

(2)

In the heart, Shuang Shuang was happy and peaceful, everywhere seemed to be filled with happiness and peace.

The wind had blown in from the window, bringing the fragrant smell of rice in the field. The harvest season had already arrived.

She lightly caressed his face, the fingertips were full of infinite pity and tender feelings, she gently said, "You are thin."

Gao Li smilingly said, "Very quickly, I will fatten up again."

Shuang Shuang charmingly said, "I like you fat, I will feed you well tomorrow."

Gao Li said, "We will have to leave tomorrow."

Shuang Shuang said, "Leave? Leave where?"

Gao Li said, "To find Little Qiu."

Shuang Shuang's face brightened and said, "We will go together?"

Gao Li said, "Certainly, We will look at his child."

Shuang Shuang was filled with great happiness: "He has a child?"

Gao Li said: "We can also have a child."

Shuang Shuang blushed, she anticipated future happiness, this kind of feeling made her feel dizzy as if she could fly.

After a very long time, she only then gently asked: "Did you see his wife?"

Gao Li said, "Not yet, I was anxious to leave."

Shuang Shuang said, "I believe that she must be a very good woman, because he is also a good man."

Gao Li said, "Not only is he a good man, he is also a good friend."

He sighed and continued, "Besides him, nobody else could extend himself and let me borrow the peacock feather."

Shuang Shuang said, "Actually what is a peacock feather?"

Gao Li said, "It is a hidden weapon variety, but it is not just any hidden weapon."

Shuang Shuang said, "I do not understand."

Gao Li said, "I find it very difficult to explain too, in brief, its significance and value exceeds any other hidden weapon in the world, because whoever has it, can become another person."

Shuang Shuang said, "Become another person?"

Gao Li nodded and said, "He will have the authority, have the self-confidence."

He had smiled and continued, "If I did not have it, I probably would not be Ma Feng's rival."

Shuang Shuang said, "I do not understand."

Gao Li said, "You probably can never understand it, even I cannot, too."

Shuang Shuang hesitated, finally she could not bear saying, "I... ... Can I trace it?"

Gao Li said with a smile: "Naturally, only make sure that you do not press the two buttons, otherwise..."

His voice suddenly stopped, the smiling face suddenly stiffened, the entire body seemed to freeze, like stepping on emptiness, falling down into the glacier from ten thousand feet high.

The peacock feather had unexpectedly disappeared! Shuang Shuang could not see his complexion, but she actually suddenly felt his whole body all trembling.

In his life, he had never felt so afraid. He had never thought that this kind of matter unexpectedly could occur to him.

He quietly disentangled Shuang Shuang from him. She had not asked him what was the matter, because she could feel it, she could imagine what it was. Only she could never completely understood how serious was this matter. Nobody could really understood how serious was this matter.

Gao Li sat motionless in the darkness, he resembled a person who had been buried underground. Then he rushed outside like crazy.

Shuang Shuang felt she was with him in the darkness. She knew that he would be looking in the location where he buried Ma Feng, she hoped he could find it. She could not imagine what unfortunate disaster might alight on them. But without really knowing, she could detect a kind of unlucky omen, the tears had also flowed down.

The wind had blown, the rustling noise resembled intermittent light sobs.

After a long time, she had finally heard his footsteps. The footsteps were slow and heavy. Her heart had sunk, quietly she dried away the tear stains, she could not bear asking: "Have you found it?"

Gao Li said, "No."

His sound was hoarse with fear. Shuang Shuang's heart resembled being burst gently by a needle, she gently said, "Can't you find out when it fell?"

Gao Li clenched his teeth, he wished he could bite his own throat. He never hated himself so much.

Shuang Shuang had not comforted him, because she knew in the present, any comfort was all useless. She could only find a way to induce his thought, therefore she kept probing and said, "When you came back, was the peacock feather already not with you?"

Gao Li said, "I don't know."

Shuang Shuang said, "You did not check?"

Gao Li said, "I... ... I did not expect that it could fall."

He certainly could not think. All tragedies were unfortunate, they all happened in unexpected situation.

Shuang Shuang could not bear saying, "When you kill Ma Feng, did you have the peacock feather with you?"

Gao Li said, "Certainly not, otherwise it would have fallen nearby."

Shuang Shuang said, "So, you did not have the peacock feather with you, but you have actually managed to kill him!"

Gao Li clenched his fists. Only now he understood that even if he did not have the peacock feather, he could equally kill Ma Feng with his own strength. It was only a pity that only now he understood it when it was already too late.

Shuang Shuang sighed gently and said, "Where was the last place you know that it was with you?"

Gao Li hesitatingly said, "On the carriage."

He had traced it on the carriage, that kind of smooth solid feeling, but the one

that generated excitement and energy to his body. At that time, he then felt completely relaxed, as if there was nothing in the world would cause him to worry.

Shuang Shuang said, "Can it have fallen on the carriage?"

Gao Li said, "Very possible."

Shuang Shuang said, "That carriage?"

Gao Li said, "It's gone."

Shuang Shuang said, "Where did you hire the carriage?"

Gao Li said, "On the road."

Shuang Shuang said, "Did you pay attention to what type of carriage it was?"

Gao Li said, "No."

Shuang Shuang said, "Had you observed how the cart driver looked?"

Gao Li hung his head, clenched his fists like a nail had entered his flesh.

At that time he was too happy, really too excited, he had unexpectedly completely failed to note the people around him. Most unfortunately, he was deliberately not willing to let other people discover his whereabouts, so he had

exchanged his carriage twice while on the road.

Shuang Shuang's heart had sunk, she knew now that they would never be able to find that peacock feather again.

The more precious the lost thing was, often the more difficult it was to find it again. Although the peacock feather was supreme to bring up the emotion and the confidence, the result was eerily similar.

Shuang Shuang tried to withhold her tears as she gently said, "What will you do now?"

Gao Li said, "I... ... I do not know."

Shuang Shuang said, "You must certainly go and tell him."

Gao Li said, "Certainly."

Shuang Shuang said, "In any event, this is not a mistake you deliberately do, perhaps he can forgive you."

Gao Li low-spiritedly said, "He cannot... ... If I were him, I also would not forgive him."

Shuang Shuang said, "Why?"

Gao Li gave a long sigh and said, "Perhaps you never can understand how

important is the peacock feather to them, but I understand."

Shuang Shuang said, "Perhaps... ... Perhaps we may think of a way to compensate him."

Gao Li said, "Nothing can help."

His sound grew more bitter and acrid, he suddenly continued, "Perhaps there is one way."

Shuang Shuang's face was suddenly twisted with fear. She had understood his meaning.

If a person made a violation he could not make up, made an unforgiveable mistake, usually only one other way to make a reparation. Death!

She could not bear throwing herself at him, closely hugged him, and said maliciously: "You cannot walk on this road."

Gao Li silently said, "What other road can I walk on?"

Shuang Shuang said, "We may walk... ... Walk somewhere else, never say anything to him."

Gao Li had suddenly shoved her away.

This was the first time in his life that he shoved her away from his bosom. He

certainly did not shove her hard at all, but Shuang Shuang never thought he, of all people, could have pushed away that she fell. She could not bear saying, "Why did you push me?"

Gao Li clenched his teeth, word by word he said, "I could not think, could not think that you can ask me to make this kind of matter."

Shuang Shuang said, "But you... ... "

Gao Li had interrupted her and said, "I have killed people, even killed some people I probably should not kill. There may be many things I should not do, but I would never have betrayed a friend."

His sound suddenly grew hoarse as he continued, "This is perhaps because I never have a friend, I only have one such friend."

Shuang Shuan's tears that had been trickling had suddenly gushed out.

Gao Li slowly continued, "I know that I cannot die, for you, for us, I cannot die, therefore I only go through all this trouble, but this... ... "

Shuang Shuang said in a hissing voice: "Couldn't you do the same here?"

Gao Li again interrupted her, "The difference is because I know the value of the peacock feather to them, I also understand the difficult situation he is, how he is braving the biggest danger, only to lend me the peacock feather. I, in this world have never had such big trust entrusted on me, therefore I cannot fail him, cannot fail him till I die."

Shuang Shuang nipped her lips and said, "Therefore you must certainly go and tell him this matter."

Gao Li said, "Certainly." His voice was filled with determination and courage. This kind of courage was the true courage.

Shuang Shuang was hanging her head. After a very long time, only then she gently said, "I originally thought you can make any matter for me."

Gao Li said, "Anything but this instance."

Shuang Shuang said, "I understand, therefore although I am very sad, I am actually very happy." With a peaceful voice she slowly continued, "Because I have not judged you wrong after all, you are really a worthy man I am proud of."

Gao Li's clenched fists slowly relaxed, finally he bent down his knees and hugged her.

Also after a very long time, he only then sighed: "I know that I have not done nothing wrong, I will not make another mistake, but I want only to say sorry to you ... I am sorry."

Shuang Shuang said with a supple voice: "You are sorry, but you are in me, and I am in you."

Gao Li did not say anything again, his earlier words were said and done. You

are in me, I am in you. Regardless of any type of disaster and unfortunate happenings, two committed people should undertake them together. If you had such a wife, what else did you need to say?

Dark.

A night without the stars, without the moonlight, was much darker.

They calmly hugged in darkness, waiting for the daybreak. Their lives resembled living forever in the darkness, but they felt happier than most people. Because in their lives they had discovered the true feelings, the true feelings that could never be replaced by anything else.

Therefore their lives were valuable.

This was the most important part.

(3)

The late, late fall.

The light had started to wane, the wind had blown harder, the autumn chill had become colder significantly.

But the fall scenery was beautiful. The cold miserable and yet touching beauty,

the sense was like that of pure strong wine. If you could immersed in it, even if you did not have anything to drink, you could feel intoxicated.

Gao Li stood here, standing under the tree, waiting. He really did not have the courage to see Qiu Feng-wu's family. He could just imagine how big was this disaster to the peacock village.

Qiu Feng-wu would soon appeared, someone had gone to notify him.

Two peacocks slowly strolled around in the maplewood, combing their beautiful feathers with the mouth.

The red maple leaves fell down.

Gao Li just stood there as if he could not move. In his heart, he felt a stabbing pain, he really did not know how to say the things he needed to say. He nearly did not have the courage to continue.

On the lawn there were sounds of footsteps, he unexpectedly did not dare to turn his head to face him. He felt has a hand grabbed his shoulder, a steady and friendly hand. A steady, friendy voice. "You come! I know that you will come back quickly."

Gao Li had finally turned around. He had no alternative but to turn his head. Then he saw Qiu Feng-wu's smile, the smile that was filled with friendship.

In his heart, the stabbing pain was fiercer. This kind of eternal, invariable friendship, would suddenly burst by a sharp needle, like a punctured heart that bled.

Qiu Feng-wu smilingly said, "You look very weary."

Gao Li nodded. Not only was he weary, he almost simply collapsed.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Actually you do not need to come here so quickly."

Gao Li said, "I... ..." He wanted to say it, but it was as if two invisible hands had clutched around his throat.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "The matter is already solved?"

Gao Li nodded again.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You do not have to use the peacock feather?"

Gao Li shook his head.

Qiu Feng-wu said with a smile: "I already know that you do not need to use it, Ma Feng is simply not your match."

Gao Li said, "But I... ... "

Qiu Feng-wu suddenly discovered the different expression on his face, he asked immediately: "Why do you come alone? Shuang Shuang?"

Gao Li said, "She... ... She is very well."

Qiu Feng-wu breathed a sigh of relief, "Why doesn't she come to see my child?"

Gao Li said, "She... ... She... ..." He lifted up his courage before he finally said loudly: "She has not come, because she knows that I want to apologize to you."

Qiu Feng-wu knitted his brows: "You apologize to me? Why?"

Gao Li said, "I have lost your peacock feather."

He used his biggest courage to say it, then his entire body seemed to collapse.

There was no response, no sound. He did not dare to think what Qiu Feng-wu felt after hearing about it, or the expression on his face. He simply did not dare to look at Qiu Feng-wu's face.

The wind blew, the dry leaves floated down, falling one by one, one, two, three... ... The sunlight became gradually paler, the autumn chill actually became more felt.

Qiu Feng-wu had not said a word, not even a sound. Gao Li finally could not bear advancing towards him.

Qiu Feng-wu stood like a statue there, with no expression on his face, the complexion was actually pale like the autumn frost on the tip of a branch of a tree in the far mountain.

He was standing calmly, not moving at all. The fallen leaves had fluttered around his head, falling under his feet. He had not moved. Even when the leaves fell on his face. He had not moved, not even his eyes had blinked.

The sun set in the west, red like the blood. The maplewood was also red like the blood.

Then the twilight shrouded the earth like a net, layer by layer, it grew darker, covering his face and his body. He did not show any light, nor any from his eyes.

He had not moved, had not spoken.

Gao Li looked at him, only wished that he could rip himself open, crushing himself, sending his body like sprinkles in the wind, sprinkles like dust, sprinkles into the fire, turning into ash after burning in the fire.

If Qiu Feng-wu had scolded him, hit him, even stabbed him, he would have received them as if he was fortunate. But Qiu Feng-wu had actually resembled someone who had been completely numb.

He resembled that he could not see anything, hear anything, or feel anything. Nothing at all. What kind of fearful attack, what an extremely painful sorrow that could cause a person to turn into this appearance?

Gao Li could not bear asking himself: "If I were him, what would I do?"

He could not imagine. He just did not dare to think about it.

Wasn't Qiu Feng-wu presently asking this question to himself, how should he cope with it? Now he was only waiting for Qiu Feng-wu's words. If Qiu Feng-wu called him to die, he would die; If he called him to die immediately, he would not want to live anymore. But Qiu Feng-wu had not spoken.

The twilight went gradually deeper, the dim light of night was coming.

A black-clothed old servant quietly came to them, bowing his head he said, "The village leader, the late meals is ready."

Qiu Feng-wu had not replied, simply had not heard.

The black-clothed old servant looked at him, his face had also got affected with the melancholy color, finally had quietly drawn back under the dim light of night.

Suddenly the black shadow had seized the entire earth.

The wind was colder.

Gao Li made an effort to clamped down his teeth, made an effort to clenched

his fists, and yet he could not bear shivering. In order to make reparations, he could endure every kind of bashful insults, each kind of pain, even endure the painful death. But this kind of fearful silence had actually caused him to go crazy. He almost could not bear destroying himself.

The wind blew again.

Qiu Feng-wu suddenly picked up his head, looked at the fallen leaf in the wind, gently he said, "Today is windy."

Gao Li clenched both his fists, after a very long time, only then he slowly nodded and said, "Yes, today is windy."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "It is windy all day long."

Gao Li said, "Yes, it is windy all day long."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Windy is very good."

Gao Li finally could not bear saying loudly: "Actually what do you want to say? Why don't you say it?"

Qiu Feng-wu now had at last turned his head, to look at him. After looking for a very long time period, only then he gave a long sigh and said, "You are a good friend, I know I can always trust you."

Gao Li said in a sad voice: "You should not trust me."

Qiu Feng-wu resembled he had not heard him, he slowly continued, "You have promised me to look at my son."

Gao Li was silent for a very long time, he finally also gave a long sigh and said, "I have promised you."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Now the child has not rested."

Gao Li said, "You want me now to look at him?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I will lead you there."

The grass had already withered and the color turned yellow! In the spring, this place must be a carpet of green grass, but at present it was already late fall, late fall for people worried with the spirits.

The distant place had some sparkling lights, bright like a sweetheart's open eyes. But Gao Li simply could not see that. At present, he only had a piece of darkness, his heart was also only filled with darkness.

Qiu Feng-wu slowly walked in the front, the footsteps were monotonous and heavy. Gao Li was behind him. He remembered also walking behind Qiu Feng-wu similarly in the past, walking for a very long time, walking very far. That was precisely right after he had just rescued Baili Zhang-qing.

At that time although he knew perfectly well that some people would retaliate

against him as necessary, although he knew perfectly well that an impending fatal disaster might likely come, but his heart was actually very joyful. Because he had rescued a person, he had helped the others. Because he had a friend.

But now?

Unintentionally he had made a fatal mistake, sometimes the unintentional violation was more fearful. What was it for? Why did the heaven allow this mistake to happen, allow him to make this unintentional, fatal, unforgiveable, unrecoverable one? Why was he not careful? Why did he neglect to take care of it?

Fiercely moving forward, he had come to a magnificent, lighted place. The light was magnificent.

A white hair, gray woman, sat well on the sandalwood chair, the face was showing temperate and gentle smile.

"This is my mother."

A gentle young married woman, solemn and virtuous, she was precisely like the bloom of spring flower's time, spring flower's beauty. Perhaps because her heart was filled with happiness, therefore she was very kind to all people, in particular to her husband's good friend.

"This is my wife."

A lovable child, with red face, big eyes, but very lively and healthy. One could say that although his life had not fully started, but his life should be happy, filled

with happy thoughts. Because he had a very good family, very good parents, he should enjoy the happiness since he was born.

"This is my child."

Gao Li looked at him, listened to him, his face had the polite smile.

"This is a friend of mine, Gao Li, always my only best friend."

Gao Li's heart was as if punctured, also started to bleed. He nearly could not bear turning back on his heels and dashed away, running away from having to face these people. If only they knew that he had lost the peacock feather, would they still be so kind?

The old man Qiu was smiling and said, "Feng-wu frequently mentioned you, you certainly must remain here for several days."

Gao Li's throat seemed to have dried up, after exhausting his whole body strength, he could only reluctantly smile, nodded.

Qiu Feng-wu's beautiful wife was teasing her child and said, "You need to call him Uncle Gao next time so he will buy some candy for you."

The child was only one year old, certainly he could not call him Uncle Gao, he also could not understand what the others were saying, but he could smile. He saw Gao Li, he continued to smile. Everybody smiled.

The old man Qiu smiled gently and said, "The child likes Uncle Gao, Uncle

Gao certainly can bring very many good fortunes for this child."

Gao Li's heart had disrupted. Only he knew that what he brought for this family member was not the good fortune, but the disaster.

Luckily Qiu Feng-wu certainly had not wanted him to stay behind. "I will lead him to see outside again, this is the first time he comes, he has very many places that he has not seen."

Gao Li indeed had not seen very many places at all, in fact, he had simply not seen such a magnificent, dignified place. It looked to him, in the dim light of night, that this place was like a palace in the myth stories.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Here altogether has nine courtyards, the majority was constructed in 270 years ago, after undergoing three generations, only then this looked like as big as now."

Actually this place had more than just the size, this place simply looked like close to a miracle.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "This is indeed a miracle, surviving two times of ravages caused by war and fire, this place was peaceful, but not unexpectedly kind."

The rear court's front was illuminated by the hanging 12 color lanterns. Magnificent light, illuminating the giant drawing on the wall. The picture was dozens of pictures showing formidable people, each taking a different weapon, but their eyes were startled. Because in the other person's hand, there was a gold cylinder that had sent out the rainbow ray. The rainbow that was more beautiful than just a magnificent ray.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "This drawing was said to be made more than 100 year ago."

Gao Li was listening.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "At that time, the underworld gang's 36 Devils star, in order to destroy this place, unexpectedly had committed blood pledges to collaborate and attack this place. These 36 person's wugong skills were high, it was said that they could possibly be invincible to the world."

Gao Li could not bear asking: "Afterwards?"

Qiu Feng-wu discussed sombrely: "None of these 36 people went back." He continued, "Since that event, nobody in jiang-hu dared to take peacock village lightly, the peacock feather's fame henceforth spread over the world."

The lights were gradually more sparse.

In this single courtyard, the sense of gloominess was reflected by the dim light. They passed through a portion of woods, a clump of bamboo trees, a zigzag bridge, only then they got here. Here was like another world, a specific world.

The big house was gloomy and cold.

In the room there were hundred of large oil lamps lit day and night before the Buddha statue, the shrouded side by side lights, looks like jack-o'-lanterns lining

up. In front of each lamp, there was the spirit throne (ling-wei).

Gao Li first saw: "The big move overlord, Shanxi's Yan Sun-fu's throne."
"Jun-qiao shan-feng the taoist's throne."

Gao Li had heard of these two people's names, in the recent past they were once stars in jiang-hu.

Qiu Feng-wu looked at this row of spirit thrones, the face became more serious, he slowly said, "These persons have all died under the peacock feather."

For 300 years, people who died under the peacock feather was also 300, therefore the peacock feather was certainly not used in many occasions. If a person died under the peacock feather, if he was not a clan leader, he would be a master.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "The ancestors feared that the descendants killed too many evil people, so they constructed this spirit thrones, so their spirits would not continue their enmities with the next generation." He sighed and continued, "It's only a pity most of their descendants would seek revenge and come here."

Gao Li had not spoken. His heart suddenly felt very strange, also very fearful. He resembled seeing his name in here.

(4)

The road was no longer winding around.

Gao Li had come to this place, place where he took the peacock feather. Why did Qiu Feng-wu also lead him here now? He had not asked.

Regardless of where Qiu Feng-wu lead him, he would not ask. Regardless of the anticipated fearful destiny, he had prepared to accept everything.

A clapping sound.

Without any words, those 12 spirit-like persons. 12 keys, had opened 12 locks. Thereupon they had entered this mysterious place, the gloomy, dark stone chamber, like they were entering a grave.

There were two ancient and heavy stone chair in the stone chamber, with dust and moss accumulating on top of them.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Sit down."

Gao Li had sat down.

Qiu Feng-wu had actually turned around, took out a small sealed liquor from inside the hole in the cliff. Tapping on it the seal was broken, revealing a fragrant, clear, luxurious liquor.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "This is a hundred-years old liquor that had been preserved here."

Gao Li said, "Good liquor."

The wine cups were also stone-carved, similarly ancient and heavy.

Qiu Feng-wu sat down, filled two cups and said, "The good liquor should be drunk."

Gao Li tossed down the content of his cup.

Qiu Feng-wu was staring at him and said, "We have not been drinking together for a very long time."

Gao Li nodded, said, "Indeed, very long."

Qiu Feng-wu gently sighed and said, "These years, there are many things that have changed."

Gao Li was listening.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "But actually our friendship has not changed."

Gao Li filled a cup again, and raised it to drink it.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I do not have a brother, but you are my brother."

Gao Li clutched the wine cups. If the wine cups were not made of stone, it would have already crushed.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Therefore I have something I have no alternative but to

say to you."

Gao Li said, "I am listening."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You have lost the peacock feather, your heart must certainly feel very uncomfortable, but perhaps even more uncomfortable than me."

Gao Li hung his head,, poured out the wine and drank it. The fragrance of the good wine suddenly turned bitter.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I understand your feeling, if I were you, perhaps I would not dare to come here again."

Gao Li's face showed painful color, he slowly said, "I have no alternative but to come, because you trust me."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Certainly not everyone has this courage, I have you as a friend, I am really very proud."

Gao Li said, "But I... ..."

Qiu Feng-wu had interrupted him, "You also trust me, just like I trust you."

Gao Li nodded.

Qiu Feng-wu's face expression suddenly became very unusual, word by word

he said, "Therefore you keep believing that the peacock feather is real."

Gao Li's entire body suddenly tightened, he blurted out: "That peacock feather is not real?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "It's not."

"Crack", the wine glass fell to the ground. Gao Li suddenly became frozen, just like a fish that was frozen to death.

Nobody can describe his feeling at this moment, nobody could also describe his expression at this moment. He looked at Qiu Feng-wu, like seeing the rising sun suddenly fell down, the earth suddenly split open. Then he fell back on the stone chair, completely collapsed.

It was not despairing collapse, nor was it delirious collapse, his tears had fallen freely down. This was not tears of sadness.

His life had never been so much like a person, who was condemned to death for a capital punishment, but suddenly obtained the desired pardon.

Qiu Feng-wu was staring at him, instead his face was actually filled with pain, After a very long time, only then he slowly said, "I tell you this matter, because I only hope that you do not suffer pain for this."

Gao Li did not stop nodding, his heart was indeed filled with gratitude. But he could not bear asking, "Not the real peacock feather?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Not real."

Gao Li again blurted out with amazement: "Not real?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "No, simply no."

He gave a long sigh, painstakingly said with a smile: "The real peacock feather was first lost by father in the summit of Taishan."

Gao Li said, "That... ... Isn't that many, many years ago?"

Qiu Feng-wu nodded and said, "Indeed that was many years ago, that was precisely after the decisive battle between father and senior Jin in Taishan."

Gao Li said, "But in jiang-hu no one has ever actually said about this matter."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Certainly not."

Gao Li said, "Why?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Because nobody knew about this matter, even I did not know."

Gao Li said, "But you... ..."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Father told me this just before the end, only then he told this secret to me."

Gao Li said, "Only told you?"

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Only told me."

Gao Li said, "I? "

Qiu Feng-wu was staring at him, he slowly said, "You are the third person who knows about this matter."

Then his color of pain grew deeper, he continued, "When first father said about this secret, he told me at once to swear a heavy oath, he wanted me to continuously keep this secret until at the point of death, then I need to tell my son."

Gao Li's complexion had gradually changed and said, "But you have now actually told me."

Qiu Feng-wu gave a deep sigh and said, "Because you are my good friend, I only hope that you do not carry this burden for your whole life."

What a great friendship! What was more precious in this world than this kind of friendship?

Gao Li had dangled his head. He felt he would rather choose that Qiu Feng-wu had not told him this secret, he suddenly detected that presently the burden was heavier.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "When you killed Ma Feng, you certainly did not use the peacock feather."

Gao Li said, "At that time, peacock feather was already not with me."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I already knew that you do not really need the peacock feather, you can always kill him."

Gao Li said, "You already knew?"

Qiu Feng-wu nodded, said, "I understand your wugong very well, I also understand you very well."

Gao Li acknowledged. He had no alternative but to acknowledge.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "By your wugong, there are already very few people in jiang-hu who are your match, but you actually lack confidence, therefore... ... "

Gao Li said, "Therefore you have lent that false peacock feather to me."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Right."

Gao Li said, "Therefore you emphasized to me over and over that I should only use that hidden weapon only as a last resort."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "I already knew that you did not need to use it." His expression was stronger, he continued, "The peacock feather is certainly not a

kind of weapon, but a kind of strength."

Gao Li said, "I am listening."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "Although you do not need to use it, but it actually may bring you the confidence."

Gao Li certainly also had no alternative but to acknowledge.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "So long as you have the confidence, Ma Feng is not your rival." He suddenly changed the topic and also said, "So long as the peacock feather exists, there is nobody in jiang-hu who dared to attack this mountain village, this is also the same truth."

Gao Li said, "This truth I understand."

----- (Previous translation point) -----

Qiu Feng-wu said, "The peacock village's 300 years of reputation, 80 miles-based industry, 500 human lives, are all the results of the construction in a small peacock steel." His expression became more serious as he slowly continued, "If peacock feather had not existed, the peacock village would proceed to be destroyed."

300 years worth of reputation, 80 miles-based industry, 500 human lives would all be destroyed. His happy content family would also certainly be destroyed.

Gao Li suddenly understood why Qiu Feng-wu had led him a moment ago to look at his family members. Also to look at the spirits throne of those who had died under the peacock feather.

These people's descendants and grandsons, if they knew that the peacock feather had no longer existed, they certainly would not let off Qiu's family and people. In jiang-hu, the hatred and the will of the people would never dissolve forever!

Qiu Feng-wu heaved a deep sigh and said, "It looks like our aristocratic family reputation in this martial arts world is a very heavy burden, as soon as you receive it, you are forever bound to it."

He slowly continued, "I originally did not want to receive this relentless burden, I originally thought the reputation that the ancestors created, does not have any relation to their descendants."

Gao Li said, "Now?"

Qiu Feng-wu had suddenly smiled, smiled very movingly: "Now I only know that when I was born with the surname Qiu, I must shoulder this relentless burden, but I also cannot shift this responsibility onto someone else, I also cannot evade it."

Gao Li's face was full of ponderance, he slowly said, "Although this burden is heavy, it is actually also a kind of honor."

Actually that was not only a kind of honor, but also an endless sacred duty

and responsibility. Peacock village's ability to survive until this day had always been a struggle that required this kind of responsibility and honor. This was a goal why they could survive. They completely did not have a choice nor any leeway!

Qiu Feng-wu looked steadily once more at Gao Li, he slowly said, "Therefore I cannot let the peacock village's reputation be destroyed in my hand."

Gao Li's look suddenly changed, as if he had made a peaceful resolution inside him.

Qiu Feng-wu's lips had actually turned white as he continued, "Therefore I cannot let any person know this secret."

Gao Li slowly nodded, said, "I understand."

Qiu Feng-wu said, "You really understand?"

Gao Li said, "Really."

Qiu Feng-wu suddenly no longer spoke nor did he dare to look at Gao Li again. His eyes were unexpectedly suddenly filled with sadness and pain, the kind of sadness and pain that had no end.

Why did a person would want to do something that other people would not do willingly or endure to do? This was also a representation of the wound to the world and its weary fatigue.

Without the wind, the cold had actually became more chilly.

The clouds outside had become completely static, congealed, the humans' hearts resembled also coldly disappearing.

"I cannot let this go outside."

"Certainly."

The liquor was bitter, but it would be good. Since the wine was in the small cup, no matter how painful it was, one could drink it while feeling good. The bitter tasting wine was good, the cold place was good, you all must drink to go to the heaven!

Qiu Feng-wu slowly stood up, he had turned back to go. He did not have to say anything again, but as he went out the door, he actually said something: "I also have something I forgot to tell you."

Gao Li was listening.

Qiu Feng-wu said, "The north six provinces escort bureau's alliance has been established, the overall leader is precisely Baili Zhang-qing."

Gao Li's gloomy eyes suddenly brightened. A magnificent flash of brightness.

Qiu Feng-wu walked on.

After a long time, Gao Li slowly said, "Thank you, thank you for telling me this matter."

He was really thankful. Because he suddenly felt that his life had been significant, he was completely satisfied. He had loved, he had also been loved by a person. He had contributed to a very significant matter, a very valuable matter. He had no qualms in this life.

Qiu Feng-wu's wine in front of him was untouched. Gao Li had drunk this cup of wine, too.

The bitter tasting wine was also good, the poisoned wine was also good, he must drink them all. This was his important thing to do in life. Even if you were not doing so well, you still need to do this. If anyone could die in peace, that would be the best. It would be even better than living well in peace.

(5)

Late at night.

There was no moon or stars in the sky. The blowing wind was cold.

Qiu Feng-wu slowly went out and walked across the courtyard. The banyan fig's leaves fell down one by one.

He calmly stood for a very long time, unexpectedly he did not seem to realize that his wife had walked closer to him.

She gently linked her arms with him, her heart all felt happy and peaceful. Therefore she forever hoped that the others could also experience similar happiness.

After a very long time, she gently asked: "Your friend?"

"He left already."

"Left? Why?"

Qiu Feng-wu had not replied to that, actually he bent down, and picked up a piece of fallen leaf.

He stared at this piece of fallen leaf, the eyes were filled with pain and sadness which could not never be erased.

The leaves were never willingly fell when the autumn wind blew by. A person's life, some times was just like this piece of fallen leaf... Wasn't it just the same... ...

This story had given us a lesson. The true victory certainly could not be depended on the weapon that one used, but it must be based on your confidence. Regardless of how fearful the weapon was, it would still not be comparable to a person's confidence.

Therefore I said that the second kind of weapon, was certainly not the peacock feather, but the confidence!

< THE END OF THE STORY >